THE LIFE OF *Patty Saunders.*

Written by HERSELF.

LONDON:
Printed for W. OWEN, at HOMER's *Head*, *Temple-Bar.*

M. DCC. LII.

19467.14.20

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
THE GIFT OF
FRIENDS OF THE LIBRARY
Aug 4, 1930

CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

THE *Author apprehends ſhe is a Daughter of* Saunders, *a Thatcher at* Luton; *but is dreſſed above her Rank. Miſchief of it. Is redreſſed. A Stranger was very fond of her. Her Mother forbidden by the Stranger to let her work, or ſpoil her Complexion. Has the ſmall Pox, and recovers.*

CHAP. II.

Not ſeeing the Stranger a long Time, her Mother lamented it: Is taken with a Conſumption: Diſcovers to the Author her true Father, juſt before her Death. He is a Duke's Son. Adviſes her what to do. Gives her a Token, for her Father and her to know each other; and dies. Author's Melancholy. Wiſhes herſelf Saunders's *Daughter. See nothing of her Father.* Saunders *adviſes and comforts her.*

CHAP. III.

Is courted by a Farmer's Son. Parents approve it. Goes with him and his Siſters to a Wake. Deſcription of it. Taken Notice of there by a young Gentleman. Makes Love to her. Her Uneaſineſs at it. How ſhe managed him. Agree on returning to Luton *next Morning, and why.*

CHAP. IV.

Sets out for Luton *behind the Farmer's Son. Are ſtopped on the Way. Her Lover bound. She is tied behind another Man and rode away with. Her Fears. They come up with a Coach and Six. She is forted into it, with one of the Men. Threatned to be ſhot if ſhe cries out. Knows not whither ſhe is going. Tries to call out for Help. Is prevented. Her Diſcourſe with her Keeper. Alights at a large Seat at Night.*

CHAP. V.

Deſcription of the Servants ſhe ſaw at the Seat. Her Employment for the Evening. Is civilly treated. But can't learn where ſhe is. Her Supper and Lodging. Her Departure in the Coach next Morning.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Her Fears upon the Road. Her Entertainment. Lodges at another Houſe. Civilly uſed, and departs on the Morrow. Grew more ſociable with her Keeper. Was nine Days travelling in this Manner. Deſcribes the Country ſhe went through, and the Difficulties. Believes herſelf in Wales. *Sees People oddly cloathed. Croſs Anſwers of her Keeper. Hopes to be relieved, but is laughed at. Arrives at an old Caſtle, where ſhe alights.*

CHAP. VII.

Finds out that ſhe is in the Highlands of Scotland. *Received with great Reſpect. Had Liberty to go where ſhe pleaſed. Deſcribes the Situation of the Caſtle. A pleaſant Place. Fears being debauched, but reſolves not to part with her Virtue. Conflict with herſelf. Two young Ladies arrive at the Caſtle. She gets acquainted with them.* Babb, *one of them, keeps her Bed.* Biddy, *the other of them, commences Friendſhip with the Author.* Biddy *deſcribes the Maſter of the Caſtle, Laird* C—r—k, *and her Condition. Shews his Rapes every Year. All his Women Servants caſt Whores of his Father's. His Tyranny. The Author reſolves, rather to deſtroy herſelf, than ſubmit to him.*

Biddy's *Reaſons againſt Self-murder to preſerve Virtue. Concert an Eſcape, and effect it. Deſcription of the Manner, and the Way.*

CHAP. VIII.

Get into an open Boat, and truſt to the Tide. Have neither Sail, Oar, &c. Are drove on Shore. Get off. Conceal themſelves in Flags. Are hungry without Food. Reflect on their Situation. Fall aſleep. Are waked with Voices, and fear being taken. Get out at Night. Deſcription of the River. Biddy *tells her Story.*

CHAP. IX.

Daylight diſcovered they were at Sea, out of Sight of Land. Their Surprize. Reſign themſelves to Death. Towards Night ſee what they think is Land. Arrive at it. Get upon a Rock, and ſecure the Boat. Find a Barrel. Get it on Shore. With Difficulty open it. It is Salt Pork. Find a little Water. Make themſelves ſick. Find Wood and make a Fire. Can't eat the Pork. Method to make it eatable. Live thus a Month. Almoſt drowned in a Tempeſt and Break of the Sea. Are ſurprized by a Gun. A Ship in Diſtreſs. The Mariners Land. Wind ceaſes. Eight Mariners return to the Ship by Lot, and the Author with them.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Seven Mariners return in the Boat with a Cargoe, intending to go again. Are all loſt. The Author left with one Will. Spencer *on Board. Are drove away to Sea. Their Diſcourſe and Reſolutions. Pump the Ship dry.* Spencer's *Account of his Life.* Spencer *and the Author in great Horrors at the Relation of his Actions.* Spencer's *frightful Dream. The Author terrified at it. Her Precautions for the Future.* Spencer *ſhoots himſelf. The Author cures him.*

CHAP. XI.

Are out at Sea three Months. The Author being on Watch, ſpies a Sail. Faſtens Spencer *into his Cabin. Makes Signals. Dreſſes herſelf in the late Captain's Cloaths, and is taken on Board a* Portugueſe *Veſſel. Releaſes* Spencer. *His villainous Thoughts. Captain's Civility to the Author. Becomes Servant to the Governor of* Pernambuco's *Lady, who is a Paſſenger. Tells the Lady her Story. Puts on Woman's Dreſs. Account of her Wealth. Deſcription of her Maſter,* Don Cortez Paboia.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Account of their Arrival in the Brazils: Arrival of her Maſter's Son Don Henriques, *and his two Siſters. Their Diverſions. Courted by Don* Henriques. *Denies him. He grows melancholy. The Author, to avoid his Importunities, reſolves to leave the Family. Diſcourſe thereon with her Lady. Tells her the Reaſon. She commends her. Don* Paboia *orders her away. Her Lady's Kindneſs. Goes on board a Ship her Maſter had provided her.*

CHAP. XIII.

The Captain Caſtello's *civil Uſage of the Author on Board, and on the Slave Coaſt. Meet with a* Briſtol *Ship at* Sierra Leon, *and ſhe goes on Board it. Are taken by a Corſair. The Captain of the Corſair makes the Author his Prize. The Author's Diſcourſe with the Pirate Captain. Her miſerable Circumſtances. Is going to ſhoot herſelf. Her Reſolution. The Captain's Attempts. She terrifies him by her Diſcourſe. He leaves her diſcontented. Sees her no more that Night. Her Reflections. He attacks her Chaſtity again. Is repulſed by her Reaſonings. Never offers to miſuſe her after. Are taken by an* Engliſh *Man of War, and carried to* Leghorn.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Her Goods reſtored by the Captors. Reſolves to get a Service at Leghorn. *Gets Acquaintance there. Has Thoughts of Returning to* England. *Meets with* Biddy. *Their Greeting. Takes her and Captain* Powell *her Husband, to her Lodgings. Miſerable Account of what befel* Biddy *after the Author left her on the Rock. Her Deliverance by Captain* Powell. *Her Inability to work as a Sailor. The Mate complains of her to Captain* Powell. *She diſcovers her Sex. He makes her his Servant. Procures her a Woman's Dreſs at the* Cape of Good-Hope. *The Courtſhip. He marries her. Rejoycings on Board. Arrive at* Bengal. *Return to* Copenhagen. *Thence come to* Leghorn. *Character of Captain* Powell. *The Captain is bound for* Venice. *The Author informs* Biddy *what had befallen her.*

CHAP. XV.

Captain Powell *leaves* Biddy *at* Leghorn *with the Author till his Return from Venice. Meet Don* Henriques *at an Aſſembly. The Author's Surprize, and Reſolution to avoid him.* Biddy *obliges her to ſee him. Their Meeting. Invite him to Dinner next Day. Diſcourſe on Don* Henriques. *The moving Scene of their Meeting alone. Aſſures her of his Affection. He informs her what had happened,*

happened, and his Travels in Search of her. Preſſes her to marry him. She refuſes. Shews her his Father's and Mother's Conſent. Are overcome with Joy. Are married.

CHAP. XVI.

Preſſes the Author to depart with him for Brazils. *She defers it till Captain* Powell's *Return. Make a Tour to* Florence. *View the Grand Duke's Curioſities. A Stranger begs a Sight of her Ring. Changes it. She is ſurprized. Diſcovers Lord* H——t, *her Father. Appoints him to ſee her in the Afternoon. Returns uneaſy. Stratagem to ſee her Father alone. His Diſcourſe, and Joy to meet her. Tells him the Story of her Life. Appoint to meet as for the firſt Time in the Grand Duke's Gallery next Day. Their Meeting there. She preſents her Husband to him. Return to* Leghorn. *Lord* H——t *makes them a Preſent, and leaves them. What it contains. The Author's Hopes thereupon.*

CHAP. XVII.

Hear of Captain Powell's *Death, and Loſs of his Ship. Conceal the News.* Biddy *hears it. Falls in Labour. Recovers. Don* Henriques *and the Author depart for the* Brazils, *and take Mrs.* Powell *and her Son with them.*

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

Rejoicings on their Arrival. Don Paboia's *Compliments to the Author. Don* Henriques *made Governor of a Fort. Don* Paboia *dies. Don* Henriques *endeavours to ſucceed in his Government, but is diſappointed. Difference between him and the new Governor. New Governor demands Don* Henriques's *Commiſſion. He refuſes. Prepare for War. Fort beſieged. Beſiegers repulſed. The grand Battle. Don* Henriques *gains the Victory. Sends Terms of Peace. Are rejected. Prepare for another Battle. Don* Henriques *procures Aid from the* Indians. *Is fearful of them.*

CHAP. XIX.

Preparations for Meeting the Governor in the Field. Precautios, to preſerve the Fort. A Detachment of the Governour's cut off. Diſpute between a Party of the Indians, *and Don* Henriques's *Men. The* Indians *murther them, rifle the Fort, and carry the Author, and all Don* Henriques's *Family into Captivity. Moſt cruel Uſage of them in their March. Arrive at the* Indian *Town. The Author's Treatment there. Her Reflections. The Priſoners are diſperſed. Five Months after have News of Don* Henriques's *March to their Relief.*

The

The Indians *fly but first kill the Prisoners. How the Author escaped. Saves her* Indian *Mistress. Discovers herself to Don* Henriques. *Their Greeting. Destroys the Town, and returns to the Fort.*

CHAP. XX.

Don Henriques *acquaints the Author of his Information of the Villany at the Fort, and what was the Consequence of it till his Return thither. Prepare for their Return to* Portugal. *Are in a Storm. Arrive at the* Madeiras. *Don* Henriques's *Death. Arrives at* Lisbon.

CHAP. XXI.

Several Suits against her on Don Henriques's *Account. She is in the utmost Distress. How she proceeded. Came to Tryal. Had lost all Don* Henriques's *Effects, if Mrs.* Powell *had not appeared by Accident. The Judge suspects a Fraud, but is undeceived. Gives her all, and condemns himself of Prejudice against her. Mrs.* Powell's *Account of what befell herself among the* Indians, *Set Sail for* England.

CHAP. XXII.

Arrive at Bristol. *Go to the Duke of* C——n's. *Are entertained in the Duke's Absence by the House-Keeper. Discovered by* Carter *the Duke's Steward.*

ard. *Their Greeting. The Author is received as Miſtreſs of the Family.* Carter *declares his Orders to furniſh her with whatever ſhe wants. Diſcourſe between her and* Carter. Carter's *Vigilance. Of the Houſekeeper.*

CHAP. XXIII.

The Author's Reception in the Neighbourhood. She remembers Saunders's *Family. Projects a Journey to ſee them. The Condition of the Family. Hears that her former Lover* David Kenton *had married one of* Saunders's *Daughters. Hears of his Misfortunes. Gives them a handſome Benevolence. Her Reflections on human Life. Her Dream. Arrives at* London, *and returns. Sends* Carter *to ſettle* Saunders's *Family in a Way of Life. He takes* David *a Farm. Receives further Orders. Settles another Daughter in an Inn.*

CHAP. XXIV.

Viſit Mrs. Powell's *Mother. Deſcription of her. Mrs.* Powell *addreſſes her. How ſhe diſcovered her to be her Daughter. Their Diſcourſe. Hears ſhe hath a large Fortune. She is diſcovered to her Brother and Siſter. Return to* Derbyſhire.

CHAP. XXV.

The Author's Concern for her Father's Abſence. Hears Saunders's *are in a thriving Way, with*

what ſhe had done for them. A Match propoſed between Lord D——r, *and her Daughter* Charly. *Mrs.* Powell *married to Mr.* Graham. *Hear from the Duke at* Liſbon. *The Author ſets out to ſee him.*

CHAP. XXVI.

Her Diſtreſs at Sea. The Author is Chaplain. Men encouraged. Save the Ship. Odd Temper of Sailors. The Leak grows worſe. The Ship runs aground. Loſe ſeveral Sailors. Ship beat almoſt to Pieces. Their miſerable Condition. Fall with a Part of the Ship into the Sea. Knew not what they ſwam on till Morning. See Land before them. Get to Land.

CHAP. XXVII.

John *viſits the Wreck. Gets ſeveral Things. Carry them from the Shore. Know not where they are. Eat heartily. Sleep in open Air.* John *ſent to ſearch the Country. Returns with a* Spaniard. *Are conducted to a Village. Examined, and ſent to* Palma. *Embark for* England. *Arrive at* Briſtol.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The Author hears that the Duke is returned. Was gone to London. *Author inclined to go to him. Is prevented. Arrival of the Duke. Hath a Fit. Diſcourſe with the Author. Relates her Voyage to him.*

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

Mentions Lord D——r's *Propoſal to the Duke. What paſſed between the Duke and the Author thereupon. What paſſed between him and* Charly *thereupon. The Duke invites Lord* D——r *and his Father to Dinner. In what Manner the Match was made up. The Duke's Generoſity. They are married. The Duke's Character. Marriage propoſed to the Author, but ſhe declines it.*

CHAP. XXX.

Captain Hawley's *Application to the Duke, on his Grandſon's debauching his Daughter. Compaſſion of the Duke. Scene between the Duke and* Harry. *He confeſſes his Fault.* Hawley's *ſecond Viſit with his Daughter. The Duke admires her. Noble Behaviour of the Duke. Gives Leave to marry her.* Hawley *overcome by the Duke's Benevolence. They are married. Fine Sentiments of* Hawley. *Duke offers him four Hundred Pounds a Year. Refuſes it. Charmes the Duke.*

CHAP. XXXI.

The Author goes to ſpend the Winter in London, *taking her Son and Daughter, and Mrs.* Graham *with her. Meets Captain* Powell *and Captain* Farquharſon *at Saint* Paul's. *Diſcourſe between them.*

them. The Author's Method of discovering to Mrs. Graham, *that Captain* Powell *was alive. Will not believe it. Sees him herself next Day. Is almost distracted. The Author discourses Captain* Powell *about his Wife, he thinking her dead. Gives him Account of her Travels. Long Discourse about second Marriage. Discovers her Marriage to* Graham. *Introduces him to his Wife. Their Meeting and Reconciliation.*

CHAP. XXXII.

Captain Farquharson *recounts his and Captain* Powell's *Actions. Captain* Powell *declares his Loss of the Ship, and Escape with Life. Mrs.* Graham *scruples to bed with Captain* Powell. *Have Council's Advice. Discourse between the Author and her thereon. Captain* Farquharson *reveals his Circumstances to the Author. Captain* Powell *finds out that his Wife is a large Fortune. The Author writes to the Duke to inform* Graham *of Captain* Powell's *Life. Receives* Graham's *Answer. Discourse between Captain* Powell *and her. The Author purchases* Farquharson *a Commission, and gives him one Hundred Guineas. All return to* Derbyshire. *Meeting of Captain* Powell *and his Wife, and* Graham. *Generous Treatment on both Sides. Reasons for the Author's Writing this History.*

THE

THE LIFE OF *Patty Saunders.*

CHAP. I.

The Author apprehends she is a Daughter of Saunders, *a Thatcher at* Luton; *but is dressed above her Rank. Mischief of it. A Stranger was very fond of her. Her Mother forbidden by the Stranger to let her work, or spoil her Complexion. Has the small Pox, and recovers.*

IN the Year 1700, or thereabouts, being about four Years old, I began first to understand, that I lived with one *Thomas Saunders*, a Thatcher, at *Luton* in *Bedfordshire*, whose Wife was very tender of me; and, indeed, was the first Person I had any Knowledge of after

my Birth: I remained with them till her Death as with my own Father and Mother, and was only known by the Name of *Patty Saunders*.

She, good Woman, had ſeveral other Children, who uſed, at times, to envy my being better cloathed, and going finer, and being put upon fewer Hardſhips than they were; and I often felt the Weight of their Reſentments, on that account. They would frequently caſt in my Teeth, when I offered to join in their Sports, and Exercifes: *No, you're a Gentlewoman, I ſuppoſe, and are above playing with us; Go, you'l but ſpoil your fine Cloaths at our Sports: Truely, if you can't work with us, you may play by your ſelf, for what we care.*

The Repetition of theſe, and the like ill-natured Speeches, giving me perpetual Uneaſineſs; my Mother, Dame *Saunders*, would know the Meaning of my looking ſo dull and melancholy; whereupon I told her how ill I was uſed by my Brothers and Siſters, and deſired ſhe would let me be dreſſed like them, and act, and do as they did, and then all would be very well, and I ſhould be eaſy.

My perpetually harping upon this String, gave my Mother great Diſquiet; and I remember it was, when I was about nine Years old, that I firſt became one of them; and my Mother threw off the Diſtinction, ſhe had before made between us; ſo that now, I went to Gleaning in th

the Fields at Harveſt, and ſometimes carried Straw for my Father, Mr. *Saunders*; was ſent of Errands, and performed ſuch other little Duties, as my Years and Abilities rendered me capable of; and, being the eldeſt of all the Children, (for there were four more, at about a Year's Diſtance each, in Age from the other) I put myſelf the forwardeſt, when any thing was to be done; and ſoon began to reliſh a laborious Life, beyond the inactive State my Mother had at firſt brought me up in.

I remember very well, a fine Gentleman (as I then named him) uſed to call at our Houſe two or three times a Year, hang his Horſe at the Door, and ſit talking Half an Hour, or more, with my Mother, and away again. He uſed to be very fond of me, give me ſome Money, and call me his little Wife, and would kiſs me almoſt all the time he ſtay'd; and I uſed frequently to ask my Mother, when the fine Gentleman would come again, for I longed for his Company, on account of his Favours. I happened to mention this one Day, when my Father was at home; and though he, good Man, took no Notice of it; yet, I ſoon after received a ſharp Reprimand of my Mother, who told me, if ever I mentioned the Gentleman again to any body, I ſhould ſee him no more; and I was too fearful of loſing ſo good a Friend, to diſobey her.

It was about three Months after I had taken Labour upon me, that one Day, as I was chopping ſome ſmall Wood in the Yard, I ſaw the Gentleman alight at the Gate; I ran, and ſtood in his way, and made him a fine Courteſy; but, though I always uſed to be the firſt he took Notice of, I perceived he overlooked me, and went in Doors. I thought I ſhould have broke my Heart; I ran back into the Yard, and fell into ſuch a violent Fit of crying, that I was not to be pacify'd; my Mother coming out to call me in to him, and ſeeing me in ſuch Diſtreſs, aſked me where I was hurt, thinking I had cut myſelf with the Wood-Bill; but my Heart was too full, for a long time, to be able to utter the Occaſion of my Tears; till, by much Entreaty, I diſcovered it, by telling her, that the Gentleman would not look upon me: My Mother no ſooner became Miſtreſs of the Cauſe of my Sorrow, than I could ſee the Water to ſtand in her Eyes, ready to burſt forth: However, ſhe comforted me all that ſhe could, and wiping my Face, conducted me into the Kitchen, where the Gentleman was ſitting by the Fire; he, hearing us come in, turned about, and looked at me, without ſpeaking a Word, while my Mother preſented me to him: But when I ſaw him ſtare full at me, and ſay nothing, I burſt out into a moſt paſſionate Fit of crying again. I then heard him aſk my Mother, which of her Children that was,

was, and why ſhe cryed ſo? which ſtill encreaſed my Agonies to an Extremity. What, thinks I, am I not known by that Gentleman I have always loved ſo, and who has ever been ſo fond of me? Oh! I ſhall break my Heart.

During my Reflections, my Mother was telling him it was *Patty*; but that, at my Requeſt, ſhe had cloathed me like the reſt of her Children, and ſent me with them to work in the Fields. He then drew me to his Knee, kiſſed me, wiped my Eyes, and ſaid all the endearing Things to me he could invent, Tears running down his Cheeks all the while; but it was a conſiderable Time, before he and my Mother could compoſe me again. He kept me cloſe to his Breaſt till he went away; and then, bidding me be a good Girl till he ſaw me again, he gave me as much as my little Hand would graſp, of ſmall Silver, which, as I now gueſs, might be about ſeven Shillings; that had the Charms to revive my Spirits again, and made me a little chearful.

I followed him to the Door, where, having kiſſed me and my Mother, I heard him privately charge her, never to let him ſee me in that Dreſs again; nor to let me do any Thing, that might either ſpoil my Hand, or Complexion.

Being ſo rich, I was very much delighted; and, when my Brothers and Siſters came home, I diſtributed ſome of my Treaſure to them alſo, and made them as joyful as myſelf.

In this Manner I lived, till about my fourteenth Year, at which Time I happened to have the Small-pox; that gave me great Concern, and all I then hoped for was, that the Gentleman might not call before I was about again; and I every Day enquired of my Mother, if he had been there; but, to my great Satisfaction, ſhe as conſtantly anſwered in the Negative.

As it happened, I had a very favourable Sort, and, in about three Weeks, all was over, and I about the Houſe again. But I ſhould have told you, I never did any Work, or appeared in my coarſe Dreſs, after the Time the Gentleman had given Orders to the contrary.

CHAP. II.

Not ſeeing the Stranger a long Time, her Mother lamented it: Is taken with a Conſumption: Diſcovers to the Author her true Father, juſt before her Death. He is a Duke's Son. Adviſes her what to do. Gives her a Token, for her Father and her to know each other; and dies. Author's Melancholy. Wiſhes herſelf Saunders's *Daughter. Sees nothing of her Father.* Saunders *adviſes and comforts her.*

I HAD now paſſed my fifteenth Year, without having ſeen the Gentleman for about a Year and a Half; and, when my Mother and I were

were alone, I have often lamented his Abſence, and could find, that ſhe was no leſs concerned at it than myſelf; nay, ſhe would many times begin the Subject; and I could perceive great Emotions in her at the Thoughts of it, though I then knew not the Meaning of it; but about a Quarter of a Year afterwards, my Mother being taken very ill, ſhe fell into a Conſumption, which, in about four Months more, carried her off.

When ſhe was reduced almoſt to a Skeleton, and expected her Diſſolution every Moment, ſhe called me to her Bed-ſide (for I was the only Nurſe ſhe had, and ſcarce ever left her Chamber); then breaking out into a Flood of Tears, after ſome preparatory Ejaculations, expreſſing her Hopes for Mercy in a future State, ſhe ordered me to ſit down by her; and taking my Hand into hers, full of Tears; *Patty*, ſays ſhe, you have here before you a dying Mother; obſerve my Words, for they may be of the laſt Conſequence to you.——Theſe Words threw me into a violent Fit of Crying; but having a little quieted me, ſhe went on: You know, that I have made a great Difference between you and the reſt of my Children; have uſed you always tenderly; wherefore I deſire, if ever you are able, you will not let your Brothers and Siſters want; and, above all, pray take Care of Goodman *Saunders*, who you call Father. Here ſhe

wept again more inconſolably than before, and drew me in to ſympathize with her, inſomuch, that we ſpent near an Hour in utter Silence. The Tempeſt of her Heart being ſomewhat abated; wonder not, Child, ſays ſhe, that I cannot ſpeak of that good Man without weeping; but know, *Patty*, that you are not his Daughter.

I ſtarting at theſe Words;——Nay, Child, ſays ſhe, you have not a leſs worthy Parent, though equally criminal with myſelf, in your Production. Here my Mother, perceiving me overwhelmed with Confuſion, interpoſed to pacify me, by telling me, that, though ſhe verily believed me to be a virtuous Girl, yet ſhe would inform me of her own Seducement, that, if any like Accident ſhould offer to me, I might avoid it.

My dear, ſays ſhe, I am now but thirty-two Years of Age, and it is near ſixteen Years ſince I bore you; but Mr. *Saunders does not know*, but you are a Nurſe-child; for you was born about a Year before I married him. I myſelf was bred up from a Child, in the Family of the Dutcheſs of *C———n*, who was ſo far pleaſed to give me Countenance, as to make me her Waiting-maid, at about fourteen Years of Age. The Dutcheſs's fourth Son, who was but little more than my Age, had for a long time been my Play-fellow; and Familiarity growing up

up with our Years, he was not ſo reſerved to me, as to the other Servants, nor was I ſo to him; the Freedom with which we uſed to converſe together, inſenſibly drew him into a more particular liking to me, and even to a Degree of Love for me: He ſoon explained his Meaning, and vowed, if I would agree to it, he would marry me. You may be ſure, I ſhould have rejoiced at ſo good Fortune; but conſidering how tenderly I had been uſed in the Family, and what a Condition it muſt reduce him to; (for I was well aſſured, that neither my Lady, or the Duke would ever look upon him afterwards;) I rejected his Propoſals, with ſuch prevailing Reaſons for my Conduct, as entirely brought him into my Way of Thinking, and gave him, as he has often told me ſince, the Pleaſure of reflecting upon my Care for his Preſervation. I am not able, ſaid my Mother, to diſcant further upon this Subject, than to tell you, that our youthful Deſires growing too prevalent for our Reaſon, we were the criminal Cauſe of your Birth; and, being with Child by him, I was obliged to make a Pretence for leaving the Family, when I found I could no longer conceal my Shame in it. You was put to Nurſe, immediately after your Birth, to a Woman, who then lay in of a dead Child, and was chriſtened as her own, and would there have continued, had I not marryed Mr. *Saunders*; when

Lord *H——t*, who is the Gentleman you love ſo, and is really your Father, thought I was the propereſt Perſon to educate my own, and ſent you home to me as a Nurſe-child.

This, *Patty*, ſays my Mother, is your Hiſtory, which it was my Duty to inform you of, before my Death; and I hope Lord *H———t*, who, I am ſure, is a Man of Honour, will one Day take Care of your well-being in the World; but I am under great Concern for his ſo long Abſence: Now, I would have you not leave Mr. *Saunders*, till you hear from, or ſee Lord *H———t*; and then, when he finds I am no more, if he offers to leave you, without propoſing a Maintenance; then, I ſay, (but be ſure not before) ſhew him a Ring, which I will now give you, out of my Cheſt of Drawers, wrapped up in a Letter of his to me, upon this Subject.

My Mother then gave me her Keys, and directed me to find the Credentials, which ſhe charged me to keep ſafe as my Life; and, if I ſhould at any time be ill, paſt Recovery, ſhe commanded me to deſtroy the Letter. She had ſcarce compleated her Inſtructions to me, but ſhe gave a Sigh, and died.

What with the Death of my Mother, and the Shock I had received, from the Account ſhe had given me of my Parentage; I grew more like a Mope, than a reaſonable Creature. I eat little,

little, ſlept little, ſaid leſs, but ſpent the far greateſt Part of my Time, in Thought, and Reflection.

Sometimes, I wiſhed I had really been *Saunders*'s Child; for then, thinks I, there would be neither any thing to hope, or any thing to fear; I muſt act according to my Station, and being virtuous, and helpful to my Parent, would compleat my whole Duty in Life; but now, inſtead of a Parent's Houſe to live in, I am only a Tenant, and ſubject at the Will of my Landlord, to be caſt into a Priſon for my Rent, and Board; for Lord *H——t* has been ſo long abſent, that there muſt be more due for my Keeping, than I am able to diſcharge, without his Help; and if he ſhould have abandoned me, how wretched muſt be my Condition?

Theſe, and ſuch like Thoughts, preyed ſo violently upon my Spirits, that I became melancholy, and fancied myſelf following my Mother, and in her Way too; for I fell away from a florid healthy Girl, to a mere Shadow.

Mr. *Saunders* (for I ſhall call him no more Father) obſerving me to decline in my Health, took Notice of it; and imagining it proceeded more from a diſtreſſed Mind, than a diſtempered Body, ſeriouſly enquired into the Cauſe; and being an honeſt, plain, and well meaning Man, has freely declared it, as he candidly ſought to know it: I told him all that my late Mother had

had declared to me, (ſave that I was her Child, and who was my Father) which he knew before; but did not think that I had, and deſigned to inform me of it: We talking the Affair over ſeriouſly together, he aſſured me, that he had already been ſo handſomly rewarded for my paſt Keeping, that though he ſhould never receive any Thing further, he ſhould think himſelf well ſatisfied.

This gave me new Life and Spirits, and having returned him many Thanks for all his Civilities, and eſpecially for the preſent Kindneſs to me, I conſulted with him, in what Manner I ſhould proceed, to eſtabliſh myſelf in Life. I told him my Mother (for to his Face, I begged Leave to call him, and his late Wife, Father and Mother ſtill) adviſed me to continue with him, till I heard from a Gentleman who always uſed to pay for my Board. Mr. *Saunders* ſtarting at that Word, aſked me if I knew who paid it, or had ever ſeen him? Here, I was in ſuch Confuſion, I knew not what to do; but reſolving to ſtand to the Truth, as liable to the leaſt Cenſure, on my Side; I told him, I had ſeen a Gentleman at the Houſe ſometimes, which Mrs. *Saunders* on her Death Bed ſaid was my Father; but I told him, he never ſtayed, but juſt to come into the Kitchen, and ſee me, and pay her, and then went away again. I wonder, ſays he, my Wife ſhould never let me ſee him; but

ſhe

ſhe uſed to tell me, the Money was ſent to her: Nay, ſays I, poſſibly that might be only ſomebody ſent to pay her, and I might miſtake her, he might come from my Father, and not be him. I ſoon perceived I had made the good Man eaſy, by that Turn, and ſo ſhifted the Diſcourſe: However, I agreed to ſtay with him ſome Time longer, to wait, till I ſhould hear ſomething further from my Father.

CHAP. III.

Is courted by a Farmer's Son. Parents approve it. Goes with him, and his Siſters to a Wake. Deſcription of it. Taken Notice of there by a young Gentleman. Makes Love to her. Her Uneaſineſs at it. How ſhe managed him. Agree on returning to Luton *next Morning, and why.*

DURING my Stay with old *Saunders*, a young Fellow, a Farmer's Son, having ſeen me often at Church, fell in Love with me, and made his Application accordingly; after two or three Viſits, I opened the Affair to *Saunders*, he told me, his Father was an induſtrious thriving Man, and that the Son had the Character of a very ſober Fellow, and adviſed me to cloſe with him.

Upon

Upon this, I admitted *his Viſits very cordially*, but inſiſted, on his acquainting his Father with it firſt; for I would not enter into any Family, where I ſhould not be well received. The young Man told me, he very much approved of that, and did not doubt, but his Father would readily conſent, when he had ſeen me; and the next Time he came, he aſſured me, that his Father would not oppoſe his Inclination; but begged I would come the following *Sunday*, and dine with them, which I promiſed to do, if his Siſter would meet me at Church, and conduct me home with her.

You may be aſſured, I omitted nothing in my Dreſs and Behaviour, that might induce the old Man to have a favourable Opinion of me; for though exceeding neat and clean, and every thing was good of the Sort, that I had on; yet, I would not put on my very beſt, for fear of giving the old Man a Diſtaſte to my Finery. I was very much complimented by the Father and Mother, and two Siſters (Women grown,) and the old Folks ſeemed highly pleaſed, that their Son had made ſo agreeable a Choice; nay, ſo fond were they of me, that they would ſcarce truſt me out of the Houſe again, till the Wedding was over.

However, in the Evening, I returned to *Saunders*'s, the young Man accompanying me, with one of his Siſters. Amongſt other Diſcourſe upon

upon the Way, we were talking of a Wake, which was to be kept at a Town, about ten or a dozen Miles diſtance, and my Siſter that was to be, told her Brother, that if I would make one of the Company, ſhe and her Siſter would go with him to it. He very readily embraced the Offer, and proffered me a ſingle Horſe, or to take me behind him, which I liked beſt. Thinks I, ſo long as his Siſters are with us, it can be no Blemiſh on me, to go with them; but as I was a bad Horſewoman, I told him, if he pleaſed I would go behind him: My Spark ſeemed very alert at that, and we agreed upon his and his Siſters calling on me at an appointed Hour in the next Week.

I took my leave of them at *Saunders*'s Door, highly pleaſed at my kind Entertainment, and at the Proſpect I had of being ſettled in a ſober worthy Family. I thought every Minute an Hour, till the Day of our Travel came; and then, as I apprehended I ſhould not ſee the old Farmer and his Wife, I dreſſed myſelf in all my beſt, in Honour to my intended Spouſe. We had about eleven Miles to ride, and we got thither about Eight a Clock in the Morning; but the unaccuſtomed Motion of the Horſe had extremely ſhook and fatigued me; however, after I had reſted an Hour or two, I was pretty well again.

Every Body in the Family we went to, *was up to the Elbows in Cookery and Paſtery, preparing* for

for the enſuing Feſtival, which I was informed did not begin till Evening; and then indeed it was ſurprizing to ſee how delicately every Houſe was illuminated, and the Profuſion of Eatables that were ſpread forth upon the Tables, in the ſeveral Rooms; and all free, for every Body but the leaſt known to them, and even Numbers of whom they had not the leaſt Intelligence. After we had Greeted abundance of Company at Home, (as I call it, being a Relation's Houſe we went to;) a large Party of us agreed, to go viſit other Farmers and Tradeſmens Houſes, as they did ours, by way of Variety, juſt drinking a Cup and away.

In our Walk, we came near a little lonely publick Houſe, where we heard Muſick and Dancing, and being about Sixteen of us in Company, we had a Mind to go in, and if not partake of their Diverſion, at leaſt to amuſe our ſelves at ſeeing them dance; we found ſix Couple Dancing, and ſeveral Spectators, every one dreſſed to an Exceſs of Neatneſs, in the plain Country Way. We had not ſtood long as Spectators, before ſome of the young Men took one, and ſome another of our Company out, and preſently, another took out me; ſo we fell into the Dance with them, very agreeably.

My Partner was not above three or four and Twenty, at moſt, and to my thinking, one of the fineſt young Men I had ever ſet my Eyes on; he

he wore his own Hair, tied with a red Ribband, had a white Hatt, and white Cloth Cloaths, Buckſkin Breeches, and white Stockings; but though many of the Farmers Sons were dreſſed in the Manner that he was; yet there was ſuch open Freedom in his Behaviour, and ſuch a different Air in his Dancing, from all the reſt, that I could not but admire his Politeneſs; nor was I the only Perſon who did ſo; for every Eye was upon him. His open Breaſt, ſhewed me as we danced, the extraordinary Fineneſs of his Linnen, and confirmed me in the Opinion, that he was not the Perſon he pretended to be.

In Dancing, whenever I was to deliver him my Hand, he took it with ſo far different a Grace from every one elſe, as charmed me, and made me not a little proud of my Partner; and I could perceive myſelf envied by all the Girls preſent, for my good Fortune.

I own, I was very agreeably pleaſed with it, as moſt young Creatures are, and could not avoid having ſomewhat the better Opinion of myſelf, for becoming the Choice of ſo accompliſhed a Man; but however, that wore off with the Evening, and now our Departure was at hand; when thinking it was too late that Night, for any further Progreſs, we reſolved to retire to our reſpective Homes.

Every young Fellow immediately inſiſted upon waiting on his Partner, and my Sweetheart having

having made Choice of one who lived about two Miles a contrary Way; was, to his no ſmall Mortification, obliged to leave us, to wait upon her; while mine, and his two Siſters Partners, and his Couzens Daughters, walked croſs the Fields with us to our Lodgings; but when we were removed from the Noiſe of the Muſick, and Company, in the ſilent Air, how raviſhing to us all, was the Voice, Accent, and Subjects, my Partner entertained us with; and though neither of us young Woman had been ever accuſtomed to other Diſcourſe, or Behaviour, than in a farmerly Way; yet we were all capable of the Senſation of a moſt pleaſing Delight, at every Word my Partner uttered. The other young Men were chiefly for a noiſy Mirth, and preſſing forward, were either for Running, Leaping, or ſome other Exerciſe, all the Way; but we Girls, kept as true to my Partner, as the Shadow to the Subſtance; if he ſtood ſtill to form any Compariſon, as he did many, on the Heavens, the Stars, or ſolemn Awfulneſs of the borrowed Moon Light, (as he called it;) not a Foot of ours ſtirred, till he moved again; and then but as forward as his went; neither could I diſcern the leaſt Notice taken by him of me, more than the reſt; for he had ſomething very Pertinent and Complimentary for us all, in ſo much that our Companions of the Male Sex, had all got Home before us.

When

When we came in, we were very merry for about an Hour, in Chit Chat; and before our Partners left us, they had engaged us, and two more young Women who had arrived in our Abſence, to meet for another Dance the next Evening, about a Mile and a Half a different Way from the Place we were at before; and where they aſſured us, we ſhould find far better Muſick and Accommodation; and then took their Leave.

I muſt own, my Vanity was ſo excited with the Thoughts of my Partner, that I even dream't of him, and all the next Day, little elſe was diſcourſed of in the Family, than his Accompliſhments, inſomuch, that I feared my Sweetheart would have been jealous; but he had too much Integrity in himſelf, to give way to any diſtruſtful Surmiſes of me; and the next Evening we ſet out again for our Rendezvous.

We met, and our ſeveral Partners having before beſpoke us, we ſoon began our Diverſions, in a much larger Company than we were in the Night before: About the Middle of the Dancing, my Partner (who till then had uſed the moſt exact Decency in all his Behaviour) never took my Hand in his, but he ſqueezed it, and Sighing, would ſcarce be prevailed upon to part with it again. I began to grow very uneaſy at it, and at the End of the next Dance, I pretended to be weary, and ſat down. I was in hopes he would

would then have choſen another Partner out of the By-ſtanders, and that I ſhould by that Means have been free from him; but was quite deceived, for he then took the Opportunity of ſitting by me, and making a long Declaration of Love to me.

I was now in the utmoſt Perplexity; what can I do, thinks I? I cannot reſt here, my Colour will betray our Diſcourſe; I ſhall to gratify this Fellow's brutal Diſcourſe to me (which has no Meaning, or at leaſt no good one I'm perſuaded in it) perhaps give a Diſguſt to Mr. *David Kinton* (for that was my Sweet-heart's Name) and quite ruin the Hopes I have of a future Settlement with him: But my Partner, who kept cloſe to me, where-ever I went, ſtill pouring forth his Paſſion, determined me to ſpeak to Mr. *David*, as ſoon as the Dance was ended, and to tell him what I ſuffered; but then, I thought, ſhould he be of a cholerick Temper, and reſent it, ten to one but ſome Miſchief will happen; ſo to avoid further Impertinencies, I pretended to be taken very ill, and deſired *David*'s Siſter to go Home with me. *David* ſeeing we were preparing to depart, inſiſted upon retiring with us. But I entreated him to ſtay, for I feared if my Partner had followed us, ſome Quarrel muſt have enſued; ſo I rather choſe to take his Siſter, and another young Woman or two

two with me, thinking he would be aſhamed to treat me ill before them, if he ſhould follow us.

Whilſt they were looking for their Hats, and Fans; my Partner coming to me, told me with a genteel Air, that he ſaw he had diſpleaſed me, begged my Pardon, and aſſured me, if I would forgive him, and not leave the Company, he would intirely drop every Word and Action that had given me Offence: This he ſaid, in ſo ſeemingly ſincere a Manner, that being loath to abridge the Company's Diverſions, I pretended to be pretty well recovered again, thanked them, and ſaid I would ſtay till they all broke up, and I believe, no Soul had the leaſt Suſpicion of what had paſſed between us; nay, I took his Submiſſion to be ſo ſincere, that I even danced ſeveral more Dances with him, in all which, he behaved with the extremeſt Modeſty and Politeneſs.

The Diverſion being ended, I would very fain have put off his waiting upon me Home; but as the other young Men attended their Partners, I could upon no Pretence, (that I choſe to diſcover) refuſe mine; though I could not all the Way forbear thinking him a Maſter-piece of Diſſimulation; for notwithſtanding the frequent Opportunities he had of private Speech to me, in our Return, he was ſo far from making the leaſt Uſe of them, that he rather ſeemed to avoid, than ſeek an Occaſion for it, inſomuch, that

that I could no longer look upon him in the disadvantageous Light I had before done.

After we came Home, *David*'s Sister speaking of our Return to *Luton*, he told her, he must be there next Night; for he had Samples of Corn to carry to Market, the Day following. Our Partners seemed confounded at that, for the Diversions were to continue the whole Week, and they all urged us to partake of them, so long as they lasted; but *David* peremptorily insisted on his being at Market, on the appointed Day; for his Head ran more upon his Corn, than upon his Pastime, and he thought we had had Entertainment enough; so that not being able to prevail for a further Reprieve, they all saluted us, and took their Leave. Then it was, I found a Renewal of my Partner's declared Passion, for it was with great Reluctance he quitted my Lips at all; however, he was now gone, and I thought no more of it.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Sets out for Luton *behind the Farmer's Son. Are ſtopped on the Way. Her Lover bound. She is tied behind another Man and rode away with. Her Fears. They come up with a Coach and Six. She is forced into it, with one of the Men. Threatned to be ſhot if ſhe cries out. Knows not whither ſhe is going. Tries to call out for Help. Is prevented. Her Diſcourſe with her Keeper. Alights at a large Seat at Night.*

THE next Morning, after Breakfaſt, we ſet out for *Luton* again, and as our Way lay croſs the Country, we had little but Fields to go through, and Commons, till we came to the *Hitchin* Road. It was a very fine Morning, and we were talking very merrily of the Pleaſures we had taken at the Feſtival; when entering into a little blind Lane, out of a common Field, four Men oppoſed us, with their Coats turned the wrong Side outwards, and their Hats tied round their Heads, ſo cloſe, that the Flaps prevented us from ſeeing more than their Noſes and Mouths. This Sight ſurpized us prodigiouſly; but when the Men commanded *David* to diſmount, threatning to ſhoot him through the Head if he did not, I thought I muſt have dropt

firſt; for my Spirits were ſo ſunk, that I had ſcarce the leaſt Life left in me, and expected nothing leſs than to be immediately murdered. Two of the Men, directly bound *David*, with his Hands behind him, and again his Arms above the Elbows, and laid him flat on his Belly; then coming to me, diſmounted me, and clapping the Pillion I rode upon on one of their own Horſes, (which were all very fine ones) two of them lifted me up, and ſeeing me juſt Fainting, and unable to ſupport myſelf upright, they tied me faſt to the Rider, with a long Cord going ſeveral Times round both our Bodies. I can't ſay, I perceived this Tranſaction, for I was then entirely ſenſeleſs; but a little Time after, with the violent Agitation of the Wind, and Motion of the Horſe, I revived; when, what to think would become of me, I knew not; I heard *David* (who I preſumed his Siſters had by this Time releaſed) at a vaſt Diſtance, crying out, and ſaw him come Galloping hard after us; but I found it was to little Purpoſe, for our Horſes were ſo fleet, that they left him croſſing a Valley, and before he could mount the Hill we were going over, we were beyond his View, and I never ſaw him more.

I am no Judge what Tract of Ground we paſſed, at the unreaſonable Speed that we kept; but to the beſt of my Judgment, I had been about an Hour and Half on Horſeback, when we

ſlackned our Pace, and I heard the two foremoſt Horſemen ſay ſomewhat of a Coach; then all ſtanding ſtill about a Minute, one of them cried, yonder it is; and clapping Spurs to his Horſe, ſeemed to fly towards a Wood, on the Edge of the Common we were then paſſing; but I, neither then, or ever ſince, knew what Part of the World I was in. Our Horſemen all made after him who rode the firſt, ſo faſt, that in about a Quarter of an Hour more, we came into a Nook of the Common, nearly encompaſſed round with a Wood, where a Coach and ſix Horſes waited for me, as I afterwards found; for upon coming cloſe to it, I was untied from my Companion, taken from the Horſe, and very civilly deſired to ſtep into the Coach.

It is not eaſy to conceive the Dread I was under; but as I perceived it would be to no Purpoſe to ſhew Reluctance, I readily ſtept in, which I had no ſooner done, but one of the Men, the ſame that I had rode behind, begged Pardon, and ſat himſelf down by me, the Coach immediately moving forward with great Impetuoſity.

I had at that Time thouſands of different Thoughts, and Surmiſes, but none of them of ſufficient Continuance to draw any Concluſion from; I was afraid to ſay a Word to my Companion, nor indeed did he utter a Syllable to me; my greateſt Hope was, that I might poſſi-

bly at length, come into ſome publick Road; and then, I determined to cry out, the firſt Town we paſſed through, for Help, and ſay they were ſtealing me away; and while I was ſtudying the propereſt way to execute this Scheme, I ſeemed tolerably compoſed in my own Mind.

I judged by the Sun, which came obliquely into the Coach Window, but much behind us, that it muſt be about Four of the Clock in the Afternoon, and had I been at Home, I could have gueſſed very near the Time, for we having no Clock, knew the Hour only from repeated Obſervations of the Sun; but as yet, we had been ſo far from entering into a Town, that we had not even ſeen a Houſe, or any living Soul, near enough to our Coach, to have heard my Call, had I cried out.

We kept on a round Trot for above an Hour longer, ſtill in theſe bye Ways, over Heaths, Commons, and unincloſed Grounds; when pretty near the Decline of the Sun, I imagined I eſpied at a good Diſtance, a covered Waggon moving very ſlowly, and preſently another, and then the Heads of two or three Horſemen; this Sight quite invigorated me, for I longed to execute my Purpoſe: Now, whether I diſcovered by my Countenance any particular Cheerfulneſs more than I had done, or whether my Companion had obſerved the Attention that my Eyes paid to the Objects paſſing on the Road, (for as I had rightly gueſſed, it was a publick

publick Road I had ſeen) or whether my leaning more frequently forward to the Coach Window, as we approached nearer and nearer, or what it was I know not; but juſt as our Coach was croſſing a large Hollow to get into the Road, and there were five or ſix Horſemen within an hundred Yards of us, my Companion put his Hand croſs me, and pulled up the Coach Window; this being of Canvas and obſtructing my Sight, I complained of the Unkindneſs, and that the Method he took would ſtifle me, who had been always uſed to breathe a free Air, for he had before pulled up his own Canvas.

My Companion, very civilly told me, he hoped I would receive no Injury for the little Time he ſhould keep the Windows up, for that I ſhould very ſoon have them both down again, if I pleaſed; but gave me to underſtand, he was Maſter of his Buſineſs: At this Inſtant, I heard ſome Mens Voices, and ſmacking of Whips, with the gingling of Bells, paſſing by the Coach Side; now or never, thinks I, for my Project: I clapped my Hand to the Window String, and was juſt ſetting up my Voice, to roar out for Help, as loud as I could; when my Companion preſented a Piſtol, with the Muzzle to my Mouth; If you make the leaſt Cry, ſays he, I'll ſhoot you through the Head; I perceive what you are about, but I am not to be trapped, be ſilent, or you die.

This Speech, and the Sight of the Weapon, ſo terrified me, that for ſometime, I am ſatisfied, I could not have declared my Caſe, to any one who had ſtopped the Coach to have aſſiſted me. I now had quite abandoned all Hope, and was plunged into an Exceſs of Confuſion; but recovering myſelf a little, I reſolved to try what my Entreaties would do, and whether by my Supplications I could not move the flinty Heart of my Jailor.

I very civilly begged it as a Favour of him, that he would let me know what Place we were in. He told me in *England*. I ſaid, I did not doubt that; but aſked what County we were in. He ſaid one of the Forty; but Madam, ſays he, I was in hopes you had a better Opinion of me, than to think you could pump me. I told him I did not want to pump any thing out of him; but he muſt be ſenſible, that the Situation I was in with him, muſt be very diſagreeable, unleſs I could know whereto he was conveying me, and for what Purpoſe: He ſaid, neither of them was in his Power to tell me; but deſiring me to make myſelf eaſy, ſaid, I ſhould have no Reaſon to complain of any Treatment that was to follow, provided I was not my own Foe through Obſtinacy.

Finding I ſhould make nothing of him, I deſiſted from my Enquiries, and turned my Thoughts to my bodily Condition; for what with the tightneſs of the Cords which had been

bound

bound about my Body, and the jumbling of the Horſe, I was now as ſore as a Boil, from from Head to Foot, and much fitter to have been in my Bed, than with the Company I was in.

By this Time, my Keeper letting down the Windows, I perceived we had quitted the great Road again, and were upon an Heath; when I more and more dreaded what might happen to me, as I found the Night approaching; for in about one Quarter of an Hour more, I could not ſee a Yard before me; but we had not travelled far in the Dark, before the Coach ſtopped, and I could diſcern, as I thought, whitiſh Rails, and heard plainly the grating of Hinges; and then the Coach moving again, I found by the Noiſe of the Wheels, we were upon hard Gravel; but here we had not proceeded many Minutes, before the Coach ſtopped again, and the Door being opened, I was deſired to walk into the Houſe.

CHAP. V.

Deſcription of the Servants ſhe ſaw at the Seat. Her Employment for the Evening. Is civilly treated. But can't learn where ſhe is. Her Supper and Lodging. Her Departure in the Coach next Morning.

WE were met at the Houſe Door by a monſtrous fat elderly Woman, ſcarce able to breathe, or ſet one Leg before the other; her Arms were ſo exceeding large and fat, that they would not come near her Body by a great way; ſhe had an enormous broad flat Face, as red as Blood all over, and a Pair of Breaſts, each as big as a moderate Cuſhion: She had a Candle in her Hand, and at her Rate of going, ſtalked towards me very majeſtically: I was wholly ignorant in what Manner I ought to behave to her, which by the Confuſion of my Looks, ſhe perceiving, in a more than maſculine Hoarſeneſs and ſcarce intelligible, deſired me to follow her. Having nothing to do, but to obey, I marched after her, through a ſpacious Stone Hall, then through a Stone Paſſage, into a moſt noble Room, charmingly furniſhed, far beyond what I had ever before ſeen in my Life; here,

here, ſhe told me, in her Way, ſhe deſired to receive my Commands.

I had, in the Coach, wept myſelf quite dry of Tears, and I now perceived, that ſome Difficulties in Life are too aſtoniſhing to be really painful; for I own, that, being releaſed from my late Jailor, though I had fallen into the Hands of another, yet, being of my own Sex, or, at leaſt, appearing to be ſo by her Dreſs, it gave me a little more Heart than I had had from my firſt being carryed off; and I propoſed ſome Things to her, which would be a Gratification to me. I found her very ready, and willing to obey, and indulge me in what I required; but I durſt not aſk her where I was, or at whoſe Houſe. She told me, I ſhould ſup when I pleaſed and go to Bed when I pleaſed; and, if I choſe it, ſhe would ſend her Daughter to ſhew me my Chamber, for that going up and down Stairs was troubleſome to her. I ſcarce knew what to anſwer her; but calling me Madam, and giving me fine Words, I took Courage to tell her, I did not care how ſoon I eat my Supper, and went to Bed, for I was much fatigued with my Journey. She immediately replyed, ſhe made no Queſtion of it, after ſo many Hours Travel. I thought I had then an Opportunity of aſking, if ſhe knew where I came from, and inquiring where I then was; but ſhe turned out.

of the Room immediately, and I ſaw nothing more of her till next Morning.

I had two large Candles, a good Fire, and a Table before me; and, as I found, that no Reflection upon my preſent Caſe would be of Service to me, or make my Circumſtances better or worſe, I determined to make myſelf eaſy, till I felt my Oppreſſion, and not to anticipate that Grief, which, in all Probability, I ſhould ſoon ſuffer.

One Thing gave me inexpreſſible Pleaſure, which was, that I had happened to put the Ring my Mother gave me, upon my Finger, and that I had got the Letter in my Pocket; both which I ſhould certainly have left behind, had I not dreſſed purpoſely, to appear amiable to Mr. *David*: But then, when I conſidered, not only the perſonal Injury that he had received for my Sake, (for it was plain, the whole Deſign was on my Account) and what Uneaſineſs the Loſs of me, in ſuch a Manner, muſt occaſion him, for ſome time my Pain was inſufferable; however, as our Love was ſo young, it dwelt not ſo ſtrongly upon my Mind, as it muſt have done, had it been of longer Standing, and attended with more endearing Circumſtances: We were but juſt entering the Outer-courts, juſt ſettling Preliminaries, nor had the Tenderneſs of our Affections, whatever they might be for each other,

other, manifeſted themſelves as yet in Action; ſo that the Impreſſions were not irremoveable.

I began at length, ſeeing nobody approach me, to take Heart to riſe from my Seat; I took a Turn or two croſs the Room, which was very ſpacious, and, in my ſecond or third Turn, ſaw, as I thought, the Sparkling of Glaſs-Doors on the further Side of the Chimney, from which I had ſat on; for it was an old-faſhion Chimney, and very long, and jutted a great way into the Room. I then took one Glaſs of Wine, which the old Woman had brought me; and, having an Inclination to ſee whither the Glaſs-Doors went to, and if I had not, through them, been obſerved all the Time I had been there; I took my Candle, and went towards them, when I was moſt agreeably ſurprized with a handſome Book-caſe full of Books. This Sight revived me very much, till endeavouring to open it, to my great Confuſion, I found every Door faſt; but how they were ſo faſtened, I could not conceive, for I ſaw no Lock or Faſtening whatever to them.

The whole Front of it conſiſted of about ſix ſeeming Doors, each two Pains broad, and about ſix high, and was full of Books, neatly bound, and gilt. I lamented very much my Inability to come at them, becauſe Reading had been my principal Delight for ſeveral Years, ſince Lord *H——t* had forbidden my Mother to put me

upon Work; and purpoſed, when any one came to me again, to deſire I might have it opened. I now waited, with much Impatience, for the old Woman, or her Daughter ſhe had mentioned to come to me, and began to think the Time very long; but no one appearing, I went again to my Book-caſe, and read the Titles of ſeveral Books through the Glaſs; when, looking on the furthermoſt Door, I ſaw a little Haſp and Staple, as ſeeming deſigned for a ſmall Padlock, but no Lock being on it, I gently opened it, and then trying the next Door, I found that, though it would not open, it would ſlide; ſo by Degrees, I diſcovered how to make them all uſeful to my Deſign.

I was acquainted with but few of the Titles of the Books; and my Study having lain chiefly in Books of Religion, and Romances, I found very few of thoſe Sorts amongſt them; at laſt I eſpyed the *Whole Duty of Man*, which, having read before, I greedily took down, as the moſt ſuitable to my preſent Purpoſe. I retired to my Fireſide, and had been reading in this about half an Hour, when the good Woman's Daughter came in, to lay my Cloth for Supper.

I had figured her out before in my Imagination, and promiſed myſelf ſome Pleaſure in the Company of a young Creature like myſelf, of whom, from her Compaſſion to my Circumſtances, I might, perhaps, collect ſome Cauſe

of

of my preſent Confinement, and of my Situation, and what further I had to expect; but, to my no ſmall Aſtoniſhment, I beheld, if poſſible, in her, a much more diſagreeable Perſon, than her Mother was. It is moſt probable, they had both lived upon the Fat of the Land all their Days; for, though the Daughter wanted but very little of the Mother's Circumference, ſhe was not, at moſt, above two thirds as tall, and much worſe featured. Upon her firſt Entrance to the Room (it being in the moſt ſhadey Part of it, where the Door ſtood) ſhe appeared to me, like what I have ſince ſeen, and which brought her immediately to my Thoughts; that is, a large ſquare Bale of Goods, rolling into a Merchant's Ware-houſe: I was ſtrangely ſurprized, I muſt own, at the firſt Sight of her, but her Voice being clearer than that of her Mother, and ſhe making Uſe of it only, to ſhew her Obſequiouſneſs to me, and Readineſs to obey my Commands, that ſoon rendered her Appearance leſs ſhocking to me.

After laying the Cloth, and only one Knife, Fork, and China-Plate, ſhe left the Room; when reflecting with myſelf that ſurely I ſhould have no Company at Supper, by the Preparation ſhe had made, I grew eaſier; but, thinks I, what ſhall I do in the Night; for I can't remember that I ever lay alone in my Life, and in this ſtrange Houſe, and theſe great loneſome Rooms,

Rooms, I ſhall be frightned out of my Wits, to be left by myſelf. This at firſt gave me a terrible Shock, but yet the Thoughts of diſcovering my Terrors ſeemed more diſmal to me, than my Fears could poſſibly be, leſt one of the two, either Mother or Daughther, ſhould offer to be my Bedfellow; for I think, I could with equal Satisfaction have lain upon a Dunghill, as have entered a Pair of Sheets with either of them.

During this Reſolution in my Mind, in came my Supper; the young Woman entring firſt, brought a roaſted Pheaſant, and after her, followed a pretty neat young Creature, of about thirteen Years old, freſh and fair, but ſomewhat inclinable to Corpulency, with two Tarts, which ſhe ſet upon the Table. I was very hungry, I muſt own, it being about nine a Clock at Night, having taſted nothing, ſave a Glaſs of Wine, and a Piece of Bread, ſince my Breakfaſt; ſo the Daughter deſiring me to fall to whilſt it was hot, I entred my Pheaſant, and eat all the Breaſt, Wings, and one Leg, whilſt ſhe went out to fetch in ſome Butter and Cheeſe.

The Girl was left to attend me, and was a pretty modeſt Child, behaving with great Decency; when the young Woman came in, having by that Time pretty well ſatisfied my Appetite, I begun to commend the Miſs, as I called her, who, ſhe told me, was hers. We had

had much other Diſcourſe about indifferent Matters, till Supper was over, then ſtripping the Table, ſhe deſired to know when I would pleaſe to be for Bed; I told her, as ſoon as ſhe would, and that I ſhould be obliged to her, for that pretty little Lady for my Bedfellow. The Child ſmiled, and courteſyed, and the Mother told me, with all her Heart, if it was agreeable to me, ſhe would wait upon me, as ſoon as ſhe had got her Supper: This, I deſiring ſhe might do, we parted.

I ſeemed fully content with the Thoughts of my Bedfellow, and ſat me down again to my Book, till, in about half an Hour, the Child coming in, and aſking if I was ready for her, we went up to our Bed-chamber.

It was a moſt noble Room, and, by the Dimenſions of it, muſt have been over the Parlour I ſupped in: Every Thing appeared with the Remains of its former Graudeur, for I could ſee the Furniture had been much worn. I looked to ſee what Doors there were in the Room, and found only that we entred at, except two, which opened into ſmall Cloſets; ſo, having locked that, and looked under my Bed, though not without inward Apprehenſions of ſome Danger, I laid myſelf down to compoſe, my Companion and I making but one Sleep till Morning; when I awaked exceedingly refreſhed, after ſo good a Night's reſt.

The

The Child, ſo ſoon as it was Day-break, offering to riſe, I prevailed upon her to lye a little longer, for that myſelf would get up with her preſently.———I took this Opportunity to diſcourſe her, in order (if I could) to diſcover ſomewhat of my Situation; but, whether it was Ignorance, or Cunning in her, or what, I can't tell, I remained juſt as wiſe as before; and, as I had been ſo courteouſly uſed, I did not chooſe to give a Diſtaſte by my over Inquiſitiveneſs; ſo up we both got, and when I came into the Parlour, my Breakfaſt was ready for me; but it not conſiſting of what I had been uſed to, and the young Woman calling the Child from me, to eat her Milk-porridge, I deſired to have a Meſs with her, which was accordingly brought; and no ſooner had I finiſhed it, but the old Woman waddled in, and told me, that my Coach was at the Door, waiting for me.

My Heart quite ſunk at this Report, and all my former Perturbation returning upon me; O! whether, whether do they carry me, ſays I; What will become of me?—I am undone.—For Heaven's Sake, Madam, ſays I, in Compaſſion to my Sex and Youth, inform me what is the Deſign of this my Tranſportation? What is to become of me? And whether am I to be conveyed?———All I could get from her was, not to be dejected, for no Harm would befal me, if I was not my own Enemy.

As

As it ſeemed plain to me, that I muſt either, by fair or foul Means, comply with what I was ordered; and imagining that my Condition would be tollerable, in Proportion to my Submiſſion; I, with the beſt Grace I could put upon it, ſtepped lightly into the Coach, and ſurrendered myſelf Priſoner at Diſcretion, my Yeſterday's Partner taking again his Place by me: He called the old Woman to the Coach-Door, before we went off, and aſked, if ſhe had ſtowed all Things neceſſary in the Seat, which ſhe aſſuring him was done, we ſet forward.

CHAP. VI.

Her Tears upon the Road. Her Entertainment. Lodges at another Houſe. Civilly uſed, and departs on the Morrow. Grew more ſociable with her Keeper. Was nine Days travelling in this Manner. Deſcribes the Country ſhe went through, and the Difficulties. Believes herſelf in Wales. *Sees People oddly cloathed. Croſs Anſwers of her Keeper. Hopes to be relieved, but is laughed at. Arrives at an old Caſtle, where ſhe alights.*

I Began to have a thouſand Jealouſies and Suſpicions in my Head, of what it could be that he meant by Neceſſaries: I fancied it was Ropes

Ropes and Gaggs, and what not, to torment me with; but could ſee no Occaſion for ſuch Inſtruments, being abſolutely in their Power. About one a Clock, I diſcovered what the Neceſſaries implied; for, after driving briſkly till that Time, we ſtopped at a loan Houſe, at the Edge of a great Moor, where a Relay of Horſes waited for us, (as I afterwards found) and our Neceſſaries, were only Proviſions for our Dinners.

I ſaw no Woman at all at this Houſe, but was conducted into a little Parlour, and left there, about a Quarter of an Hour, alone; it had a Glaſs-door opening into a ſmall Garden, wherein I diverted myſelf, as well as the melancholly Occaſion would permit me; and then the Cloth being laid, a cold Fowl and Neats Tongue, with Butter and Cheeſe, a Pint of Wine, and a Bottle of Ale, were ſet me, and I was deſired to walk in: Here I dined by myſelf, and then returning into the Garden, every Thing was taken away but the Wine and Ale; and by the Time the Servants had dined, we were moving again.

A little after Dark, we houſed, but in a far different Habitation, from what I lay in the Night before: It was a pretty little Box, new built, of four Rooms on a Floor, and thoſe but ſmall ones.—However, being tired with my Day's Journey, and having eaten a hearty Dinner, I only

nly had a Meſs of Water-Gruel for my Sup-er, and went to Bed, reſolving to overcome ny Timidity at once; for I ſaw but one Wo-mankind in the Houſe, and ſhe was by no Means n agreeable Bedfellow for me. I took my uſual Precautions, and, to my great Satisfaction, lept very peaceably, till the Sun was up; when I alſo aroſe, prepared to encounter whatever preſented to me.

I had no ſooner broke my Faſt, but the Coach was at the Door again, and away I went with my old Keeper; but being the third Day of our Acquaintance, we became much more ſociable than before, and talked on diverſe Subjects very familiarly: What gave me more Flow of Spi-rits this Day than the reſt, (beſides that of being more accuſtomed to my preſent Misfortune) was my having been able to lie alone, which I feared I ſhould never have overcome; and it ran in my Head ſo all Day, that I even longed for Night, to put it in Practice again.

However, not to be tireſome to my Reader, my Journey continued for nine whole Days, the two or three laſt of which, were over ſuch Precipices, Rocks, and Mountains, and through ſeveral ſuch rapid Streams, as ſometimes the Waters flowed over the Seats of the Coach, and we were frequently in Danger of being overſet, and of drowning. We ſpent one whole After-noon in climbling up only one Mountain, being

obliged

obliged every Minute or two to clap a Bar, to prevent the Coach from running backwards, and drawing the Horſes after it, who were too faint to make Reſiſtance, being all of a Foam, and breathleſs.

Though we were two or three times ſo wet, as to be to our middle in Water in the Coach, yet all the Comfort we had was, to get out and wring our Cloaths, drying them as well as we could in the Air, for there was neither Houſe, nor Hutt in many Miles perhaps; at laſt, after a very comfortleſs Lodging in a Hutt, little better than a Stable, and into which the Wind blew through the Rafters upon me; from the Ridge of a long Tract of Hills, I beheld the Sea at a great Diſtance to our left Hand. I had heard of the Mountains in *Wales*, and verily believed myſelf to be there, though I did not know what Part of *England* that was ſituated in; and, with this Notion in my Head, I paſſed the Remainder of the Day, till towards Evening, we dined in a Bottom, between two Hills, where were many large thick ſingle Buſhes, which ſheltered us from the Wind, like Screens: Here it was that my Companion told me, that we had but one Hill more to climb, before we got to our Journey's End.

Though I had ſeen ſcarce any Perſon, even at a Diſtance, for three or four Days before, I this Afternoon met Abundance of People, in an odd Sort

Sort of Dreſs, which I knew not what to make of, with round Caps on their Heads; nay, I met with none but ſuch. I aſked my Guide what thoſe People were, and how they came to be cloathed ſo; He told me, all the Inhabitants were ſuch; I then aſked where I was; he ſaid, in the King's Dominions; ſo that I could get nothing by my Queſtions: Nay, though we were ever ſo jocoſe together upon any other Subject, yet, if I touched upon any the leaſt Thing for Information Sake, he returned me juſt ſuch croſs Anſwers.

When we came to deſcend the Hill, on the further Side, I ſaw before me, as I thought, a large Town, for it covered a great Space of Ground; but upon nearer Approach, I perceived the Houſes to be but ſtraggling, with large Spaces between them; however, as my Keeper did not draw up the Windows of the Coach in going through it, I reſolved to make one Struggle more for my Liberty; and coming into the moſt populous Part I had ſeen, wherein were gathered together upwards of fifty Men, with many Women amongſt them, I put my Head out of the Coach, and cryed Murder, help, help me, for God's Sake, I am ſtole away.——Stop the Coach.

I every Moment expected to ſee my Keeper's Piſtol at my Head again; but ſo far from it, that he was laughing aloud behind me, and all the People

People before me hallowing, and anſwering his Laughter; nay, even my own Sex joined in the Chorus, but not a Soul took the leaſt Notice of my Complaints, or attempted any Thing for my Deliverance, though the Coach was then going but a Foot-pace.

My Cries being no ways anſwered, I drew myſelf back into the Coach again, and believe, if I had then had any Weapon in my Hand, I ſhould have either murdered myſelf, or my Keeper, or both; for I never before was in ſuch a Fit of Deſparation.

As I cooled a little, my Keeper calmly aſked me, why I had been in ſuch a Rage? What I had ſeen that ſhould make me ſo? And whether I had wanted any Thing? I replied, I wanted my Liberty, and that his Violence to me would one Day appear againſt him at the Bar of Heaven. Well, well, ſays he, never fear, I ſhall juſtify myſelf; and, as I ſee you don't like my Company, I'll go but a little further with you. Whilſt we were thus diſcourſing, and had got about a Quarter of a Mile beyond the Houſes, we ſtopt at an old Caſtle, which I did not ſee till we came upon it; here we alighted, and paſſing through two large Courts, came to an old Stone Door-Way, into which I was conducted; immediately ſeven or eight good likely Wenches came about me, and ſpeaking altogether in a hollow Tone, that I could not underſtand,

ſtand, more than here and there a Word of, put me to more Confuſion, than I had felt during the whole Journey.

CHAP. VII.

Finds out that ſhe is in the Highlands of Scotland. *Received with great Reſpect. Had Liberty to go where ſhe pleaſed. Deſcribes the Situation of the Caſtle. A pleaſant Place. Fears being debauched, but reſolves not to part with her Virtue. Conflict with herſelf. Two young Ladies arrive at the Caſtle. She gets acquainted with them.* Babb, *one of them, keeps her Bed.* Biddy, *the other of them, commences Friendſhip with the Author.* Biddy *deſcribes the Maſter of the Caſtle, Lord* C—r—n, *and her Condition. Shews his Rapes every Year. All his Women Servants caſt Whores of his Father's. His Tyranny. The Author reſolves, rather to deſtroy herſelf, than ſubmit to him.* Biddy's *Reaſons againſt Self-murder to preſerve Virtue. Concert an Eſcape, and effect it. Deſcription of the Manner, and the Way.*

THE Oddity of my new Companions Dialect, more and more confirmed me that I was in *Wales*, and that what they talked was *Welch*; when one of them, who had ſpoke to me, and made ſeveral Signs, perceiving I did not

not underſtand her, took me by the Hand, and led me into a large Inner-room, and then ſpeaking deliberately, and by herſelf to me, I could, with ſome Attention, make out what ſhe ſaid, and had not been long in her Company, before I gained the Knowledge of my being in the Highlands of *Scotland*; but I could get no more from her, either as to the Name of the Place, or whoſe Houſe I was at.

If I had delighted in Homage, I might have been ſerved on the Knee; for every Servant, of whom there were near a Regiment, of both Sexes, vied with the other, who ſhould pay me moſt Reſpect; and even a ſignificant Look, ſeldom failed of being productive of what I wanted.

Nothing remarkable happened to me, for the firſt three Days that I had been there, for I was under no Reſtraint; I might either go out or in at the Caſtle-gate, juſt when, or how I pleaſed, nobody ſeemed to watch me; but I was very cautious how I gave the leaſt Suſpicion of an Elopement; for, as the Caſtle ſtood upon a ſmall Hill, in the Middle of a large Valley, ſurrounded with Mountains, and all the whole Space, except juſt about the Caſtle, and the Town, as bare as my Hand, with neither Tree, or Buſh upon it, it was next to an Impoſſibility for any one to eſcape over the outer Mountains, without being deſcryed by them at the Caſtle; and,

and, unleſs I had been ſure of getting clear off, I ſhould, as I then thought, be perhaps clapt under more ſtrait Confinement, ſhould I be ſurprized in attempting it; ſo that, though my Head was conſtantly at Work upon my Eſcape, I was determined not to attempt it, till ſome practicable Means offered.

I muſt needs ſay, had I known poſitively the Conſequence of my being brought thither, and if I could have any ways reconciled that to myſelf, my Situation ſeemed ſo delightful in every Shape, that I ſhould have thought I had arrived at my chiefeſt Felicity; but the Dread of what was to come, palled every Proſpect that ſeemed to offer me any Enjoyment.

I fixed it as my Principle, that I would never disjoint my Virtue from my very Being, but part with both together; and for what other Purpoſe, ſays I, can I have been brought ſo many hundred Miles, but to be debauched. Then again, I would reply; have I not been in my Keeper's Power ſome Weeks? Hath any Thing like it once offered? Or, would he have brought me ſo far, only for a Purpoſe which he might have expected to execute much nearer Home? Had his Propoſals been honourable, why did he not wait a Repulſe from me? If he was determined, it had been better to have gained my Conſent.——Then again, I apprehended that this Caſtle, as they called it, was ſome Nunnery,

Nunnery, and that I was to be ſhut up for the Remainder of my Life; (for I had heard ſome one call a large covered Walk, the *Cloiſter*.) If that is all, ſaid I, why ſhould they ſcruple to tell me ſo? I ſhould then be very eaſy, having but converſible Creatures of my own Sex about me. Thus was my Mind upon the continual Wreck, only to obtain ſome Certainty, of what was to be my future Fortune.

When I had been there about three Days, as I was walking one Day before the Caſtle-Gate, I ſaw ſome Perſons on Horſe-back coming over the Top of one of the Mountains; and, though it did not ſeem to be much above two Miles thither, yet they did not arrive at the Caſtle, in leſs than an Hour and Half; for I could obſerve them ſometimes on this Side, ſometimes on the other of the Caſtle, ſtill winding backwards and forwards, till they deſcended to the Vale, and then they came ſtrait forward to the Gate. Theſe were two beautiful young Ladies, with ſix Highland Servants; they rode into the firſt Court, and alighting, went directly through the ſecond, into the Houſe. I ſuppoſed one of them to be the Miſtreſs of the Family, for I had ſeen nobody ſo likely to be ſuch before; and walking gently to the Caſtle, I obſerved, that a ſubmiſſive Regard was paid to them, by all the Family.

It

It was about Six o' Clock in the Afternoon, when they came in, and I kept walking about till I was tired, and then went in alſo.

I had, ever ſince I came to the Caſtle, eaten my Meals by myſelf, till this Evening; when, being deſired to walk in to Supper, I found the ſame two Ladies I had ſeen on Horſe-back, both in the Room, and at the Table, ready to ſit down with me. We complimented each other, and they were very facetious all Supper-time; but my Education had not ſet me upon a Rank with them, for Politeneſs of Converſation, which Defect daſhed me very much; though I took all poſſible Precaution, not to engage too far in Subjects I was ignorant of, or to aſk too many Queſtions, unleſs of very common Affairs; ſo that we paſſed the Evening with great Cheerfulneſs on all Sides, as we did ſeveral ſucceeding Days; for I was determined, unleſs they began firſt, not to give any Account of myſelf, or my coming thither, or even to hint at my being ſuſpicious of any bad Deſign in it.

Our daily Intercourſe growing into Familiarity, we became conſtant Companions in our Amuſements, ſometimes Walking, Riding, Reading, or otherwiſe Diverting ourſelves; till one of the young Ladies falling ill of a Fever, it was thought proper for her to lye by herſelf, and to have a Perſon ſit up with her. In the Evening of the Day ſhe was taken ill, after Supper, as

the other and I were Diſcourſing, *Biddy* (that being the Name I had only head her called by) told me, ſhe was extremely ſorry that *Babb* (which was the Name of the young Lady that kept her Bed) ſhould be taken ſo ill, and ſaid, ſhe muſt get one of the Maids, ſhe believed, to lye with her; for, ſays ſhe, I have always had ſuch an Averſion to being by myſelf in the dark, that I never could lye without Company. I told her that was, till very lately, my Caſe; but that I had conquered my Fears, and could lye alone now very well. Says *Biddy*, my dear, with your Leave, we will lye together in your Bed. I told her, I ſhould be very glad of her Company; and we continued ſo to do, for ſeveral Nights after.

This Intimacy ſoon grew to a Fondneſs for each other; and, as we became more familiar, we began to talk of each others domeſtick and private Affairs. I found ſhe was of a very good Family in *Shropſhire*, and that her Father was next Heir to a large Eſtate, had been bred to the Sea, in the Merchants Service, and was Commander of a *Weſt-India* Man; and I alſo informed her, that my Father was the Son of a Duke, but a younger Brother; and that I, being at a Friend's Houſe in *Bedfordſhire*, upon my Return, was carried off by ſeveral Ruffians, who had brought me to this Caſtle; and that the firſt Notice I had of the Place I was in, was,

that

that I was in the Highlands of *Scotland*. *Biddy*, here crying, juſt as I began to weep very much, which excited me to ſympathize with her; and, when we had recollected ourſelves a little; my dear *Biddy*, ſays I, you have been here longer than I have, don't take it a-miſs, if I aſk you, for what Purpoſe you was brought hither? For I ſuppoſe my Coming muſt be on the ſame Account, though as yet I have no Certainty for what it is; but can aſſure you, I live in perpetual Horror at the Thoughts of what is to ſucceed this Liberty I now enjoy here.

O, Child, ſays *Biddy*, your Turn is not yet come, you will have ſome little Reſpite yet; and, though it requires no long Head to diſcover the Motives of our Captivity; yet it requires a ſtrong Heart to reveal the Diſgrace and Ignominy we ſuffer here: You may eaſily now conceive what I mean; and, which is the worſt of all, we have but little Proſpect of ever eſcaping the Toils, of the moſt beaſtly Man upon Earth.

This proving very cold Comfort for me, I began to be further inquiſitive, about who, and what he was, that ſhould be at ſuch Pains, to entrap young Creatures in ſuch a Manner?

She then told me, it was the Laird of *C—r—k*, whoſe Father, ſhe ſaid, was juſt ſuch another; and that moſt of the Women Servants in the Family, were ſuch as his Father had, from time

to time, picked up by the ſame Means, and, having kept them till they grew uſeleſs to him; and themſelves having been ſo long abſent from their own Country, till they were familiarized here, he put them into the mean Offices of his Family, and made them ſubſervient to the new Comers.

I told her, that, upon my firſt Appearance, all the Women Servants were very obſequious to me, and had ever ſince been ſo; which I wondered at, if they had themſelves been once Miſtreſſes. O, ſays ſhe, they know who they have to deal with; they durſt as ſoon eat their own Fleſh as do otherwiſe; you know not what a tyrannical Government they live under, for a ſingle Word from one of us, would condemn them to a Dungeon, till they rotted or ſtarved, unleſs we became Interceſſors for their Releaſe.

Lord, ſays I, what a Place am I come to?—Well,—he ſhall never have his Will of me.—Piſh, piſh, ſays *Biddy*, that is all a Joke. Whatt? When you are in the Hands of a mercileſs Raviſher, do you expect to melt him down to Pity by Entreaties?—And, if you mean to try your Strength with him, he has his Ruffians to execute any villainous Orders he gives them.——No, no, ſays ſhe, you have ſtill ſome Time to reduce your Temper to a Compliance with him, for that is the ſole Chance you have for it. What would you ſay, after being forcibly debauched,

bauched, to be thrown into one of his Damps, as he calls them (Vaults under the Caſtle) of a vaſt Depth, up to the Mid-leg in Filth and Naſtineſs, bred there from time to time, by the confined Sufferers? What will you ſay to that, when the Damage is already done; for he will have his Will of you firſt.

This Relation that *Biddy* gave me, made me ſhudder, and almoſt ſtaggered all my former Reſolution; however, I told her, that my Averſion, from ſeveral Motives, was ſo ſtrong againſt every Sort of Compulſion, and my Virtue ſo prevalent againſt all Compliance, that I was determined, when once it came to that, I would deſtroy my own Life, rather than yield Obedience to ſo brutal a Man.

Alas, Child! ſays ſhe to me, you have not ſeriouſly reflected on thoſe Things, as I have done; you talk wildly; pray why would you deſtroy yourſelf? becauſe nobody ſhould compel me to an Act that I am aſſured is ſo Criminal in the Sight of my Maker, ſays I. So, ſays *Biddy*, you would voluntarily commit a Sin you can never repent of, and be forgiven; rather than you would involuntarily be compelled to commit another, which (being againſt your Will) you muſt be ſorry for, and may be forgiven. I paused upon this a good while: *Biddy*, ſays I, you have robbed me at once of the only comfortable Hopes I had left; I ſhall go diſtract-

ed, my Miſery encreaſes ſo faſt, I am not able to bear it, what ſhall I do? You have broke the Clue of all my Comfort, and I am out of all Meaſure undone.

Hold, hold, ſays *Biddy*, chear up, you have heard the worſt; now I will endeavour to enliven you again. Come, this Fate is not to be ſo irretrievably yours, as by no Means to be avoided. As how, ſays I, my deareſt Friend tell me? Why, ſays ſhe, I perceive you are ready to run all Hazard rather than to fall into this Tyrant's Clutches. That I am, ſays I, name but the Means, I'll ſtick at nothing to avoid him. Says ſhe, I have a Scheme in my Head, which may releaſe us both from this Confinement, which I abhor as much as you can, but I allow it to be Dangerous. O, ſays I, there is nothing in it, if it is but poſſible; the Danger is a Trifle, never let us ſtand at that.

I think, ſays ſhe, I may truſt you with any Thing, and not be betrayed. O, *Biddy*, never doubt it, ſays I; no, you ſhall ever find me faithful to the laſt; and if we can but get out of this curſed Place, let what will befall us, I ſhall be happy. I then told her, how I hoped to be releaſed at the Town, and called out to the People to ſtop the Coach. My dear, ſays ſhe, there is not one of them, but would upon a Nod of his, have been inſtrumental in the Debauch of their own Mother; they are all his Creatures,

Creatures, his Slaves, nay the meaneſt of Slaves; but ſays ſhe, my Laird *C—r—k*, is now at *London*, proſecuting a Law Suit, about an Eſtate he has in *England*, and will not return till *July*: Now, ſince he has been abſent (as I have the Uſe of his Horſes and Servants you know) I have taken the Opportunity of Riding to every Place within five Miles or more, all round the Caſtle, by which Means I am perfectly acquainted with every Spot of Ground about it; and I have diſcovered, it may be four Miles to the Weſt of us, a ſmall Creek, which I am ſure muſt by the Situation run into the Sea, (which itſelf is not above ten Miles off) becauſe I have ſeen it ſometimes very low Water, and then again very high Water; now if we could but get thither, in the Night, there is always a Boat tied to a Stake juſt by a Fiſherman's Hut, with which we may go with the Tide to the Sea, where we ſhall find Ships enough to take us in.

I was greatly delighted with this Propoſal, and after ſome further Debates of what was to be done, we both thought we had concerted our Affairs ſo well, that there was no Poſſibility of Failure; when I ſtarted the Quere, how we ſhould get out of the Caſtle, without being miſſed? O, ſays *Biddy*, I forgot to tell you that; you know our Window looks into the Garden, and that old Gate, at the bottom of the Moat, I have ſurveyed, and find it is only bolted on

both Sides, ſo that we can in the Day-time walk round and unbolt the Outſide, and the Inſide when we come to go out at it. But *Biddy*, ſays I, what ſhall we do, if any Body ſhould obſerve us going down the Water, what will they ſay upon ſeeing only two Women in the Boat? My dear, ſays ſhe, I perceive two Heads are better than one; I did not think of that, I vow, or what we can do in that Caſe, but we will conſider of it, and talk it over again to morrow Night.

We kept cloſe together good Part of the next Day, and nothing ran in our Heads but our Scheme. I then aſked her, if ſhe had ever mentioned it to *Babb*; ſhe told me no, ſhe was cautious of unfolding it to her; becauſe ſhe took her Reſtraint more patiently than herſelf did, and ſhe was afraid of her diſcovering it.

After Supper, *Biddy*, as we were ſitting alone in the Parlour, ran to ſhut the Door, and taking me to the Window, told me ſoftly, that ſhe had been upon the Hunt in the Laird's Appartment, and had found in a Preſs there, a Couple of Plaids, Bonnets, and the reſt of the Man's Dreſs, which ſhe had locked up in her Drawers, againſt the good Time; this was a very pleaſant Piece of News.

Well, we talked of it all Night, and carried Matters ſo far, that the next Night was pitched upon for the Execution. We retired for Bed about Ten of the Clock, and it being Moonlight, we put out our Candle, and dreſſed ourſelves

ſelves in our Man's Habit; but exceeding Awkward we were in it; about twelve a Clock, when we were certain every one was in Bed, we tied one of the Plaids to the Window Bar, and I got out firſt; *Biddy* was juſt coming the ſame Way, when I recollected, that as we had tied the Plaid, if ſhe came down by it, we ſhould not be able to untie it again, ſo I made Motions with my Hand for her to keep back; then Whiſpering, that ſhe might juſt underſtand me, I bid her untie the Plaid, and put it croſs the Frame, with both Ends out of the Window, and ſo come down by it, and I would receive her at the Bottom; we effected this, and without further Care, paſſed the Garden Door, Bolting it after us, leſt that ſhould diſcover which Way we went, and got down the Hill; we walked for our Lives, and accordingly loſt no Time, but in leſs than two Hours, though we had a Mountain to paſs, arrived at the Waterſide; we then immediately unhooked the Boat, and committed ourſelves to the River.

Here we both returned Thanks to that Providence who protects his Creatures whenever they ſeek his Will, and purſue it by the beſt Means in their Power, and begged his Aſſiſtance in our further Progreſs.

CHAP. VIII.

Get into an open Boat, and truſt to the Tide. Have neither Sail, Oar, &c. *Are drove on Shore. Get off. Conceal themſelves in Flags. Are hungry without Food. Reflect on their Situation. Fall aſleep. Are waked with Voices, and fear being taken. Get out at Night. Deſcription of the River.* Biddy *tells her Story.*

WE were now in the Boat, and at our firſt Launching off, expected to have gone down the Tide at once; but to our no ſmall Terror perceived ourſelves rather carried up into the Country: As for Oars, Sail, or Staff, we had neither, they being all carried to the Hut; nor could we have done much Good with them if we had; but about Half an Hour after we were got in, and in the Height of our Lamentations for our ill Luck, we obſerved that the Boat moved ſlowly back again, and then going faſter and faſter, we repaſſed the Hut, and in ſpite of all our Endeavours, at length drove on Shore.

We now gave up ourſelves for loſt, and reſolving to quit the Boat, (for we could not make it ſtir) we got out, intending to try our Fortune by Land; when immediately being diſburthened

ed of our Weight, we perceived it to move again, and make towards the Current. *Biddy* was out of all Hope then, but I running after it above my Middle, held it while ſhe came up, and then we both got in with great Difficulty, and had we met with any more Shoals, the Water ebbing very faſt, we muſt have been aground, and have remained there till the next Tide. We laboured and ſweat moſt profuſely, working with our Hands inſtead of Oars; and though we met with many Delays, yet we perſiſted; but before we got clear of the River, Daylight came upon us, even this threw us into great Perplexity; and what ſtill added to our Diſcompoſure was, that we ſaw ſeveral ſtraggling Houſes before us upon the River, at a great Diſtance; and we feared if we were ſeen by any one, we ſhould be ſoon apprehended and taken; for that undoubtedly when the Fiſherman ſhould miſs his Boat, he would follow it down the River. We therefore eſpying a great Bed of Flaggs and Ruſhes near us, uſed all our Endeavours to lodge the Boat in them for Security till the next Night, and either remain in it under the Shelter of the Flaggs, or ſhift for ourſelves on the Shore; all the Inſtruments we had to Guide us to the Flaggs were, our Hands, which, with infinite Labour, we plied, and with much difficulty got to them; when holding, and pulling by the Flaggs, we drew the Boat further and further

in, and the Water ſtill being pretty Deep, at our Entrance, they roſe again behind the Boat, ſo that no Trace of our Approach was to be diſcerned; having got up a good Way, we ceaſed, and ſat down to reſt ourſelves, and here it was, we firſt began to conſider what we ſhould do for Food; for that was what we might eaſily have ſupplied ourſelves with, and now, (after ſo fatiguing a Night) very much wanted.

Here we took the firſt ſerious Proſpect of our deplorable Condition; we were very weary, wet, and hungry; as for the two firſt, we might find a Remedy, but what to do in the latter Caſe we could not tell; for it now being broad Day, we feared to land leſt we ſhould be diſcovered; ſo reſolved to run the Riſque, rather of periſhing by Hunger, than of falling into the mercileſs Hands of our Tyrant again, which we both dreaded more than Death itſelf, after ſuch an Attempt as we had made for our Eſcape.

In this melancholy Situation, we both fell aſleep, and remained ſo, till we were rouſed by ſeveral Voices we heard, both from the Shore, and on the Water; when expecting nothing leſs than to be ſurprized, we with all the Silence poſſible laid ourſelves along on our Faces, at the Bottom of the Boat. We once thought they had been ſo near us that we muſt have been diſcovered, hearing a Ruſsling in the Flaggs, as we apprehended, cloſe to us: We then both burſt into

into Tears, and lay weeping, till all was huſh, and hearing nothing for ſometime, we ventured up to our Seat again; in this Condition we remained all Day, longing for Night, which we thought would never arrive. We were now quite dry again, and tolerably refreſhed with our Sleep, which had recruited our Spirits, neither did we very much ſuffer as yet, with Hunger.

At length Night came, and a dark one it was indeed, and rainy; which though of great perſonal Inconvenience to us, ſtill we rejoiced at, as we hoped we ſhould meet with no one elſe on the River to moleſt us. The Water was then very high, and we eaſily got our Boat out again, and as well as we could conducted it into the Current, when to our great Joy, we obſerved before us a long Piece of Wood, which we took on Board, and afterwards proved very uſeful to us; for when we came a little paſt the Houſes, the River Narrowing, and Winding prodigiouſly, we were, by the extraordinary Strength of the Current, every Moment in Danger of being ran on Ground, and infallibly muſt have been ſo, had not we had the Board to prevent it; ſo that we running very ſwift, had enough to do to guard againſt the being thrown upon one Side or the other, all the Way we went, till the River Widening, we came into better Sailing, where though we made leſs Way, we had much more Reſt.

We

We were now both at Leiſure to take a Draught of Water, which we very much wanted, and which had hitherto been our ſole Suſtenance; and as we had nothing elſe to drink out of, we had before dipped our Hands in, and took a Sup at a Time in our Palms; but the firſt dip *Biddy* took almoſt Poiſoned her; for we had now got into the Salt Water, and had loſt our only Refreſhment. We had ſtill a good Heart, and our Boat going ſmoothly with the Tide, we minded nothing elſe; for we only kept a Look-out, as well as we could in ſo dark a Night, that we ran not upon the Shore, and ſo long as we kept clear of that, we were eaſy.

Having nothing of Employment, we ſat down, and I aſked *Biddy* how ſhe came into that wild Country, ſo far from Home; ſhe told me, that ſhe was put by her Parents to a Boarding School at *Stafford*, where ſhe had been for ſeveral Years, and in about a Month's time more, was to have quitted it, her Mother ſending her Miſtreſs Word to prepare her Things againſt that Time, thinking ſhe then grew too big for a School. She ſaid that it being a great School, and her Dancing Maſter having two others in the ſame Town, he uſed once in a Year to hire the Town-Hall for all his Scholars to have a publick Ball in, at which Time, moſt of the Gentry in the Neighbourhood came to partake of the Diverſion.

She

She was ſingled out to dance ſhe ſaid, by a very pretty Gentleman as ever ſhe ſaw in her Life, who firſt danced a Minuet with her, then a Rigadoon, then a Louvre, and as he returned her to her Seat, engaged her as his Partner for the Country Dances, which were to ſucceed. She ſaid, ſhe was very proud of ſo amiable a Partner, and charming a Dancer. That the next Day, he waited upon her to drink Tea, as did alſo ſeveral of the other young Gentlemen upon their Partners, at her Miſtreſſes; when being about twenty Couple of them, they agreed to take a Walk along the Road Side, towards a noted Bowling Green Houſe, about a Mile from the School, where the Gentlemen and Ladies uſed frequently to rendezvous there being an incomparable Proſpect; on all ſuch Occaſions, ſays ſhe, our under Teacher conſtantly went with us, to keep us Girls in due Order; we were very merry there, and our Company being ſo agreeable to each other, we ſtayed till the Moon was up, before we returned; when every one having his Partner by the Hand, we marched forward in a long Train, two and two; my Partner purpoſely ſhifting about, ſo that we might be the laſt Couple. His Diſcourſe was ſo very agreeable, and his Manner ſo engaging, that though he lagged ſomewhat behind the Company, I could no Ways force myſelf nearer to them, he ſo charmed my Ear, with Praiſes

of

of my Perſon, my Dancing, and Accompliſhments.

We had not above a Quarter of our Journey to go homeward, when we heard ſomething coming very faſt upon the Road meeting us, which as it drew nearer, we judged to be a Coach; we were then not twenty Yards behind our Companions, when, hold, ſays he, let us ſee who it is; but we had not ſtood Half a Minute, before the Coach ſtopped right againſt us, and a luſty Fellow leaping out, he, together with my Partner, as quick as Thought, ſwung me into the Door, got in themſelves, and away the Coach went like Lightning, upon the full Gallop.

I ſcreamed out with all my Force, though I queſtion to this Day, whether my Companions ſaw any Thing of it, it being done ſo ſuddenly, that I myſelf can't purſue the Manner of it in my own Imagination, with the ſame Diſpatch that it was executed.

You may imagine my Surprize, by what you have told me of your own; but ſure one who has never experienced ſuch a Thing, muſt be at a Loſs to conceive it. We travelled at an exceſſive Rate, I ſuppoſe for fear of a Purſuit, I crying out for great Part of the Way, and my Partner ſtriving all he could to pacify me, Vowing, Swearing and Proteſting, that he could not live without me, and that he had made uſe of this Method,

Method, only to have it in his Power to make me the happieſt Creature upon Earth. All the ſoft Things he could ſay, had no Effect towards my Pacification, but rather enflamed me the more: I tore my Hair, and attempted to leap out at the Coach Window; but they reſtraining me from that, I begged them to ſhoot me thro' the Head, but no Entreaty would prevail.

I could by this Time perceive we were out of the Road, and were driving through Heath and Fern, upon ſome Common; when three or four Perſons on Horſeback, coming by the Side of the Coach, I fell again into an Agony, begging them for Pity ſake, to relieve a young Creature, who was forced away from her Friends; but inſtead of affording any Ear to my Complaints, they Rode Cheek by Jole with the Coach, without opening their Mouths to my Relief; that gave me immediate Reaſon to conclude, that I had been making my Application only to my Guard, who were concerned in the Plot; and we had not gone much further, before my Partner, obſerving that all he ſaid to ſtifle my Reſentment was only loſt Labour; Stop, ſays he, to the Coachman, and mounting one of the Saddle Horſes, ordered the Rider up behind the Coach, then bidding me good Night, and directing one of the Horſemen to follow him, he whiſpered the Fellow in the Coach with me, and ſeemed

to

to take the ſame Way back again; the other two Horſemen attending me.

In this melancholy and diſtracted Manner did I continue till Peep of Day, when we came to a large old Houſe, where my Coach Companion told me, I muſt alight.——— I obſtinately refuſed to come out of the Coach, or to be ſeen by any Body: but he ſtepped into the Coach again, and whiſpering me; ſays he, don't put me under a Neceſſity of being rude to you; if you are ill uſed blame yourſelf. I muſt obey the Orders of my Superior, and you muſt purſue mine.

This peremptory Warning brought me out; when he told me to be eaſy; fear no Ill, ſays he, you will receive none: And then delivering me in Cuſtody, to the moſt abominable Piece of Carrion I had ever beheld, he left me.

Here *Biddy* deſcribing my fat Woman, I perceived we had both been Priſoners in the ſame Houſe, and that ſhe ſet forwards on her Journey the next Morning, and had proceeded by the ſame Stages as I did, to the Highland Caſtle, much about a Twelve-month before me.

Pray, ſays I, *Biddy*, what ſort of a Perſon is the Laird *C—r—k*, for I have a great Notion it was he himſelf, that was my Partner before I was ſtolen away? She then deſcrbed the very Man to me, and what made him more remarkable, and added to the Livelineſs of every other Part of her

her Deſcription was, that he had ſeveral ſmall Moles upon his Face, which confirmed me in my Opinion. She told me, he had been of Age but three Years, and that every Spring he had travelled to *England* in his Coach, which he had returned with a new Miſtreſs, himſelf arriving on Horſeback, a Month or two afterwards; for ſays ſhe, his Father did ſo before him. —— *Babb*, ſhe told me, had reconciled herſelf to him, and his way of Life ſo well, from the Dread ſhe had of ever ſeeing her Friends again; that ſhe was determined to ſpend her Days with him, and take the Chance of what Treatment ſhe ſhould meet with.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Daylight diſcovered they were at Sea, out of Sight of Land. Their Surprize. Reſign themſelves to Death. Towards Night ſee what they think is Land. Arrive at it. Get upon a Rock, and ſecure the Boat. Find a Barrel. Get it on Shore. With Difficulty open it. It is Salt Pork. Find a little Water. Make themſelve ſick. Find Wood and make a Fire. Can't eat the Pork. Method to make it edible. Live thus a Month. Almoſt drowned in a Tempeſt and Break of the Sea. Are ſurprized by a Gun. A Ship in Diſtreſs. The Mariners Land. Wind ceaſes. Eight Mariners return to the Ship by Lot, and the Author with them.

IT now began to be broad Daylight, when rouſing ourſelves from the Compoſure we had been in during *Biddy*'s Relation, we conjectured that we muſt be out at Sea, and were frighted almoſt to Death, to think that we might never reach the Shore again; for we looked all round, but could ſee neither any Ship (as we had imagined we ſhould) or the leaſt Sign of Land, unleſs a little blewiſh Thing to our Left ſhould be ſo, which at the Diſtance we were from it, we could not be certain of; but be it what it would, it was much at one to us, for we could

could neither make that, or any other Way, but as the Tide carried us, and in a little Time we loſt even the Sight of that too.

It would be impoſſible for any unexperienced Perſon to form the leaſt Idea of what we underwent, when we came cooly to reflect upon our then preſent Condition; being two young helpleſs Creatures, in a ſmall Boat, without Maſt, Sail, Oar, Knowledge of where we were, or Judgment to guide us, and without Proviſions of any Sort; and that we had been now near forty Hours without it, and in no ſeeming Probability of meeting with any; left intirely to the Mercy of the Seas, where the leaſt Breath of Wind, or Wave, would overwhelm us. We looked at each other for Help, and Advice, but neither could afford it; our Tears flowed to no Purpoſe, and all the Reſource we had was, only to the Almighty Aid of Providence, to whom we laviſhed out our Cries and Petitions.

Thus we paſſed the Day, having by this time reſigned ourſelves up to inevitable Death, either by Famine, or Drowning; when toward the Decline of the Sun, we obſerved ſomewhat look gilded like the upper Edge of a Cloud near the Horizon, which we hoped might be Land, and keeping our Eyes ſteadfaſtly fixed towards it, as unwilling to loſe ſo joyful a Sight, we perceived that we advanced by Degrees nearer and nearer to it, till at laſt before dark, we ſaw it very plain,

plain, and in leſs than Half an Hour more, were cloſe to it, being ſucked round an Elbow of it, that advanced forward into the Sea. Juſt upon the Turn of the Corner, in a little Break of the Rock (for we now perceived it to be all Stone,) we ſaw a ſmall Barrel, bobbing in a Clift, with the ſhaking of the Water, and making to it, took it into our Boat, with much ado, for the Weight had almoſt overſet us both; when we had got it, we knew not what it contained, or how to open it; but finding a flat Place of the Stone, where we conjectured that we might Land, we reſolved to quit the Boat, and with both our Belts, and the piece of Board we had, if poſſible, to faſten it to the Rock, while we remained on Shore; for we dreaded the Loſs of our Boat more than any thing.

After great Difficuclty we effected this, and rolled out our Barrel; (for it was too heavy for us to carry) till we came to a large Flat, where we ſet ourſelves down to Reſt; but, then how to get Water, puzzled us more than Victuals. We could hear ſomething rattle in the Caſk, ſo that we were ſure it was not Liquor in it. We had each a *Scotch* Knife fixed to our Plaid, and with them we cut the Hoops of the Barrel, but at each End there were two Iron Hoops, and they maſtered us, till finding a Piece of the broken Rock, we beat them ſo long, till we got them off at one End, and then our Caſk burſt open,

open, and the Head flew out. Here was a happy Sight indeed, for its Contents were pickled Pork; we each of us thanked Providence, and took a Slice, putting it to our Mouths; but they were ſo parched for want of Moiſture; that we could neither of us chew, or ſwallow a Bit of it, and both thought we ſhould faint, we were ſo ſick with attempting it; ſo we ſpit it out, and grew as we thought more wretched; till clambering a little higher on the Rock, we found ſome freſh Water, about two Quarts, which had drained into a little Hollow, from the fall of Rain we had had the Night before.

We both laid down with our Faces to the Water, and drank as long as we were able; licking the very Stone dry, and ſeemed prodigiouſly refreſhed by it; but we were no ſooner on our Leggs, than we grew ſo Sick, we both directly brought it up again, being ready to die with Pains in our Stomachs; we blamed each other for drinking ſo immoderately, ſtill finding ourſelves as dry as ever ſince Pukeing, but extremely ſick; we returned then to our Pork, but found it ſo hard that we could not get the leaſt Bit ſmall enough to ſwallow; ſo we went upon the Hunt for more Water, reſolving but juſt to waſh our Mouths a little.

The Morning began now to dawn, and in our Search, for we went different Ways, *Biddy* came and told me, ſhe had found a great deal of

of ſmall Wood, if we could contrive to make a Fire. I went with her to the Place, where we each took an Arm full of it, and climbing up the Rock with Difficulty, carried it to our Pork. I then took the Dirk from my Jacket, where I had thruſt it, and ſtriking againſt the great Stone, which we had opened the Barrel with, I found it would ſtrike Fire; ſo breaking a Piece from it, by repeated Blows on the Rock, we took of the rotteneſt and drieſt Wood, being what had been caſt up by the Waſhing of the Sea, and by Dint of Labour, with that Shiver and my Knife, at laſt we got ſome of the Sparks to catch on the Crumbles of it: This we cheriſhed with all imaginable Care, till at laſt, having brought it to a Blaze, we were to all Appearance as joyful, as if we had each been entering the Doors of our Parents Houſes in *England*.

We ſoon made Fire enough to broil our Pork, and longed for it to be ready; but alaſs! when we began to Taſte it, it was not only ten Times harder than before, but ſo ſalt, that it ſtead great Part of the Skin from our Mouths, and ſent us, for very Pain, in Search of Water to cool us with; but we had Diſcretion ſufficient before we went, to cut ſome very thin Slices of the Pork to carry with us, and to diſpoſe of our Fire in ſuch Manner, as that it might not go out before we returned.

The

The Rock we were upon, was about Half a Mile over each Way, but rather longer than it was broad, full of great Irregularities, and towards one End, where was a large Hollow or Baſon, we found Plenty of good Water: Here we ſat down, taking but few Sipps of it; and waſhing, and beating our thin Slices of Pork in it, till we had beat moſt of the Salt out, we then returned to our Fire, in hopes of better Succeſs, and indeed we could now make a Shift to eat the fat Part, though but very little of the Lean; however, we eat but ſparingly, and then carried a large Piece, and left in the Water to ſoak; but what we had eat, though it ſuſtained Nature in ſome Meaſure, it made our Drought inſufferable, till in our further Searches, near the Shore, where the Surff had been caſt up, and was rotted to a ſort of Mould, we found ſeveral Herbs, and amongſt them a kind of Sorrel; this was of ten Times the Service in allaying our Thirſt, that the Water was of; but we did not taſte many of the Herbs, for fear of Miſchief, though from what we ventured upon we found great Relief.

In this Manner we lived for about a Month, as near as I can gueſs, keeping our Fire always in, and wrapping ourſelves in both Plaids at Night, under ſome Shelter of the Rock. Seeing no living Creature all that while, except Birds which frequented the Water, we diſpaired of

ever getting to a better Settlement, and concluded that when our Pork failed, we muſt periſh there; for our Boat had long been carried away by the Tide.

One Night as we were lying in our uſual Manner, the Wind having raged very much all Day, and then being very boiſterous over our Heads, growing louder and louder, we were almoſt frighted to Death, with the unuſual Noiſe of the Sea breaking over our Rock; it was dark, and we were afraid of getting up, leſt ſome Accident ſhould befal us, as our lodging Place was not far from the Shore; but we could get no Sleep for the Roaring of the Waves, which by their violent Daſhing againſt the Rock ſeemed to make it tremble. While we lay thus quaking and ſhivering, a great Wave breaking over the Rock behind us, ran over the Ridge that ſheltered us, and poured down ſo violently, as if the whole Sea had broke in over our Heads; and had we not been then lying along, within ſide the force of its Fall, we muſt inevitably have been waſhed away with it into the Sea; but as it was, we gave ourſelves over for loſt, being wholly immerſed in the Water for ſome Time: When it had left us, we could neither of us ſpeak, though we had both ſtarted up upon our Seats, being almoſt ſtrangled with what had got up our Noſes, and down our Throats,

and

and were then ſitting above our Middles in the Water which was left behind, and lodged there.

As ſoon as we could poſſibly recover ourſelves ſo as to riſe, we quitted our Retreat, and got up to the Top of the Rock; but what was our Surprize, when we ſaw the Sea look all on Fire, towering and flying about, as if it aimed at reaching the Sky; this Sight ſo ſhocked us, (eſpecially when the Waves daſhing upon the Rock, flew over us like ſome prodigious Shower of heavy Rain) that we were inconſolable; but all we had to do for it was, to get inwards towards the Middle of the Rock, as well as we could to avoid it. It blew at the ſame Time ſuch a Hurricane, that we were ſeveral Times forced to fall down, leſt we ſhould have been carried away by it; and then, as it abated again, we aroſe and got a little further. We were now ſome Way from the Shore, and began to think ourſelves ſafe from the Water; ſo we ſet our Backs againſt an Eminence in the Rock, which ſheltered us from the Wind, and thought our Station a very happy one; but juſt as we were deſcribing to each other our Apprehenſions at what had preſented, we heard a Gun fired, and ſaw a Flaſh of Light from behind us; this made us both ſtart, and tremble terribly, for the Light coming over our Backs, we imagined the Gun had been fired cloſe to us: We caught hold of each other, and clung cloſe together, reſolving

to die ſo and not be ſeparated, waiting every Moment to ſee the Perſon who had fired; but hearing nothing more for ſome Time, we grew calmer in our Minds, only bewailing the Cold, and Wetneſs of our Condition; preſently we ſaw a ſecond Flaſh much brighter than the firſt, and heard another Gun much louder; for the Wind ſeeming to have abated a little, we heard it ſo plain, as to be ſure by the Noiſe it made, that it muſt be a Cannon.

We could not yet find out the Meaning of it, till very ſoon after we heard, as we thought, a Hallowing, or violent Noiſe of Human Voices; this ſurprized us ſtill more, till hearing Words ſpoken, and finding they came nearer us, we ventured out a ſecond Time, to watch what it could mean, and ſoon perceived it was a Ship in great Diſtreſs.

It gave us ſome Courage, to think we might fall into Company again with human Creatures; ſo the Wind being conſiderably abated, we moved towards the Sound, and hallowed to them; they immediately returned it, aſking where they were, and what Place we called it? We told them a Rock we had been caſt upon, but we knew not where, though it muſt be ſomewhere near *Scotland*. They then aſked us if there was any Landing? So we directed them as near as we could to the Place where we had quitted our Boat, and in about a Quarter of an Hour,

Hour, thirteen Hands of them arrived on the Rock, and drew up their Boat after them.

We were overjoyed to ſee any Part of Mankind again, and they being in as wet a Condition as ourſelves, aſked if we had no Fire, or Fire-wood; we told them we left a Fire at the Beginning of the Night; but coming to look for it, it had either been waſhed, or blown all away, for we could only find the black Spot it had been made upon, not an Aſh remaining.

By this Time, it began to grow light enough to ſee Faces, when neither we, or they, could find fault with the others Looks, for we were all like Scare-crows, wet as Dung, and half dead with Fright. We went then to look for our Pork; but our Caſk was not to be found, or any more than one or two Pieces of Meat, which were jammed into Cracks of the Rock. As Daylight came on we could ſee the Ship labouring in the ſubſiding Waves, for the Wind being quite laid, the Sun never viſited a clearer Sky all round the Horizon.

As the Sea grew leſs turbulent, ſeeing their Ship ſit pretty upright, they told us, they were amazed ſhe had not gone down to the Bottom yet; for they expected all to have been there in her before now; but that as the Weather was ſo fine, and ſhe was ſtill above Water, they would viſit her with their Boat, and at leaſt get ſomewhat out of her for their Subſiſtance. It

was then agreed, that Seven of us ſhould go to her, and Eight ſtay on the Rock, and as the Sea ran very high ſtill, and the Undertaking was hazzardous, they caſt Lots, and made us do ſo too, which Seven of us ſhould go.

Upon this, the Maſter of the Veſſel, (as I then perceived he was) told them, that as the Ship was committed to his Care, he ought to be the laſt that quitted her, and ſo, ſays he, you all know I was; then, ſays he, if ſhe is entered again by us, ſhall not I be the firſt to do that too? Therefore I inſiſt upon being one of the Boat's Crew, and then there will be Seven of you to go with me, and as many ſtay behind. This ſaid, we all but the Maſter drew Cuts, when they fell upon the Mate, the Carpenter, myſelf, and four others. We were but juſt got into the Boat, when one other of the Men ſaid, he had ſomething on Board, he valued as his Life, and would go with us; ſo our Boat's Crew, conſiſting then of nine Hands, we made all the Way we could to the Ship, which was ſtill bearing from us, as the gentle Wind which then Blew, directed her.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Seven Mariners return in the Boat with a Cargoe, intending to go again. Are all loſt. The Author left with one Will. Spencer *on Board. Are drove away to Sea. Their Diſcourſe and Reſolutions. Pump the Ship dry.* Spencer's *Account of his Life.* Spencer *and the Author in great Horrors at the Relation of his Actions.* Spencer's *frightful Dream. The Author terrified at it. Her Precautions for the Future.* Spencer *ſhoots himſelf. The Author cures him.*

THEY judged that the Ship might be about two Miles from the Shore, when we ſet off; but, as the Sailors afterwards gueſſed, was got half a League further, before we overtook her, which at laſt we did, and all went on board. The Water was a great Height in the Hold; however, the Captain and Men ſearching about, began to ſuſpect ſhe might ſtill be brought to Shore; but for fear ſhe ſhould not, as they found ſhe muſt want great Repairs, and that all their Hands were little enough to perform them; the Captain went in the Boat with ſeven Men, to carry a large Cargoe to the Rock, of Proviſions, and Neceſſaries for Covering, in caſe of the worſt; leaving myſelf, and one more in the

Ship till their Return; for the Wind chopping about, the Ship ſeemed now to drive towards the Rock again.

I was not over-fond of returning in the Boat, for fear that, if the Captain ſhould get his Men on Board again, *Biddy* and I ſhould be left on the Rock where we were; for I collected from them, that they were not going to *England*, but to *Hamburgh*; and I cared not where I was, ſo I was amongſt civilized Creatures, till I could get to *England*.

The Boat was to return the next Day, with more Hands to pump the Ship, and to get her near the Rock, that they might take the Sails, and other Things on Shore to mend them; but we reckoned without our Hoſt, for ſhe had not gotten a Quarter of a League from us, before we ſaw her go to the Bottom, and every Soul was loſt; my Companion and I being Spectators of the Accident, without the leaſt Ability of aſſiſting them, though ſeveral of them ſwam a good Way towards the Ship, before they ſunk.

This Accident threw me and *Will. Spencer* (that being his Name who was left behind with me) into ſuch a Dejection, that we were both very near laying violent Hands on ourſelves, whilſt the firſt Agonies of our Deſpair laſted; but then, conſidering that we were ſtill alive, and in proſpect of Surviving, till poſſibly ſome Veſſel might relieve us; and I taking my Condition

Condition to be much preferable to my Situation upon the Rock, began to cheer up *Spencer* a little, encouraging him to do the beſt he could for our Aſſiſtance; aſſuring him, that, although I had never been on Board a Ship before, I would readily be inſtructed in any Thing, and execute his Orders in the beſt Manner I was able. How? ſays *Spencer*, never on Board before? Why, that is my Misfortune, for I ſcarce know the right Name of any Thing in the Ship, but the Main-maſt: I have not been on Board above three Weeks myſelf; we muſt periſh, we muſt periſh. Prithee, ſays I, don't cry, you muſt periſh, but let us lay a Hand to the Pump; you know the Captain ſaid, he muſt get his Men on Board for that; ſo that I am ſenſible it is the firſt Piece of Work to be done; then don't let us hope to find Help elſewhere, if we won't lend a Hand to it ourſelves.

By good Fortune, the Pump was already fixed, and had been wrought, he told me, before they quitted the Ship; ſo I went to work with it, and laboured hard above an Hour; then going to ſee how much I had ſunk it, (for I marked the Edge of the Water before I began) I found I had lowered it about two Inches; I then perſuaded *Spencer* to ply it in good Earneſt, which he did for a good Space longer, and ſunk it about three Inches more. I then let it lie an Hour, to ſee what Water was let in in that

Time; but finding it not riſen at all, I then followed it again, and ſo did he, three or four Hours a-piece every Day, till we pumped her below the Ballaſt, when we found the Ship as tight as we could wiſh her to be.

We had Victuals and Water in Plenty in the Ship; ſo that, though we knew not where we were going to, or how to uſe one Inſtrument on Board, yet I was content, ſo that the Ship kept but above Water; but poor *Spencer*, when I ſpoke to him of the Aſſiſtance of Providence, and how much it became us to depend upon that, with a deep Sigh told me, he verily believed, that the Storm itſelf was raiſed on his Account, and that all the Damage hitherto ſuffered, was but to make the Voyage more terrible to him; and he was ſure in the long-run, the Ship would ſplit, or be caſt away, purely for his Sake. I wondered at his Talk, and imagining that our Diſtreſs might have turned his Brain, I very much compaſſionated him, ſaying all I could to revive him; and aſked him, how he could harbour ſuch melancholly Thoughts, when he ſaw how many had periſhed before our Faces, and yet we were preſerved? He told me, it ſignified nothing talking to him, for he plainly ſaw every Thing was aimed at him. I then aſked him, what Evils he had been guilty of more than other Folks, that he ſhould harbour ſuch black Apprehenſions of Things? Nay, ſays he,

he, as only you and I are together, I will tell you, for it will never be in your Power to betray me, we ſhall both go to the Bottom together. You muſt know, ſays he, my Father, who was a Carpenter of great Repute at *Londonderry* in *Ireland*, died when I was very young, and my Mother having no other Child but me, was ſo exceſſive fond of me, that, when I grew big enough for a Free-School we had in the Neighbourhood, ſhe put me to it; but I might go, or not, juſt as I would; for if my Maſter complained of my Negligence, or Non-attendance, ſhe begged him not to correct me, for ſhe would take Care, ſhe ſaid, I ſhould do better; and though ſometimes ſhe would chide me for it, yet, I plainly ſaw, that ſhe was more fearful of offending me, than I was of diſturbing her. Thus my Time paſſed at School according to my own Pleaſure. At about fourteen ſhe put me Apprentice to a Plummer, where at firſt I did pretty well, but could not help uſing my Maſter as ill as my Mother, in a ſhort Time; about my ſeventeenth Year I took a Fancy to my Maſter's Daughter; and though I believe, if my Mother had aſked it, I might have married her; yet, not loving a Life of Confinement, I prevailed to debauch her. I then took up, and ſtuck to my Buſineſs and my Miſtreſs very cloſe, each for the Sake of the other; when, finding ſhe loved little Preſents, and Treats, by Stealth

and

and my Pocket not being able to anſwer them, I now and then robbed my Maſter; and then drained all I could from my Mother by fair Means: But this ſtill not anſwering all my Occaſions, (for I thought nothing too much, or too good for my Miſtreſs) I then came to foul Means, breaking open my Mother's Drawers, and taking Money, or Money's Worth, whatever I could find, and ſometimes beating, or otherwiſe groſsly abuſing her into the Bargain. This Trade went on till my nineteenth Year, when my Miſtreſs aſſuring me ſhe was with Child, we neither of us could concert any Means of concealing it; and ſhe declaring, ſhe would run to the furthermoſt Corner of the Earth, than lie in at her Father's, made me almoſt diſtracted. If ſhe quitted his Houſe, Money muſt be ſome how obtained to keep her abroad, but this I could not acquire. Under this Difficulty, I one Day met with a Tennant of my Mother's, who paid her thirty Pounds a Year, which was the moſt Part of what ſhe had to live on; and he telling me, he had been to carry my Mother his whole Year's Rent, in the Evening I went to her, with a Reſolution to have it, or beſt Part of it; and had already ſchemed in my Head, how I would apply it, for the Benefit of my Miſtreſs: but to my great Surprize, I had no ſooner made my Demand, but my Mother aſſured me, that as I had been ſo great a Villain

to

to her already, ſhe would never keep either Money, or any Thing valuable by her again; and that as for the Rent, ſhe had lodged it in a Neighbour's Hand, whence ſhe would draw it out as ſhe wanted it, for her own Support, and that ſhe would not give me a Farthing. This Anſwer ſtung me to the Quick, and taking up a Caſe-knife, which lay on her Dreſſer; you old Bitch, ſays I, will you go this Minute, and fetch me twenty Pounds, and I will never trouble you more while I live: But ſhe replying, I had been ſuch a Raſcal to her, that, if I was ſtarving, ſhe would not give me a Groat, I plunged the Knife, up to the Haft, in her Heart, and down ſhe dropped dead upon the Floor, nor had I Power to withdraw the Knife again. You may judge, that the Confuſion I was then in, left me but little Leiſure for Reflection; but conſulting with myſelf the beſt Means, as I thought, to prevent Diſcovery, I took a dry Faggot, and laying it under the Table, I placed all the Chairs in the Room round it, and laying my Mother's Corps on the Table, I ſet the Faggot on Fire, and made off, as faſt as I could, in hopes that, by burning the Houſe, my Mother's Death would ſeem accidental: But juſt as I had ſhut the Door, and was making off, a Farmer by chance coming by, and ſeeing a great Light in the Houſe, he called in Help, which preſerved the Building, and diſcovered my Mother in the Manner I have

have related. My Time was then come for Flight, which I made to the next Sea-port, and there entered on Board this Ship.

Spencer had wrought himſelf into ſuch Confuſion, at the Repetition of this Tranſaction, as could only be ſurpaſſed by the Horror I conceived both at it and my Meſs-mate; however, I carried it off as well as I could, and reſtrained myſelf as much as poſſible, from looking ſhyer on him than uſual, or hinting the leaſt Thing to him, that might revive the Remembrance of it, leſt I ſhould draw upon myſelf ſome ill Conſequence from him.

About a Week afterwards, as I was on Watch one Night, (for we kept regular Watch, for fear of eſcaping any Thing that might take us up;) having a Candle in the Cabin, in comes *Spencer*, in his Sleep; lead on, ſays he, I'll follow you.——Is that the Door of Hell?——And will you not forgive me, Mother?——Oh how ſhe bleeds!——Stop her Wounds.——Muſt I go in?——Muſt I go in?—O how they ſhriek?——What will become of me!——Muſt I go in?——O! I muſt, I muſt. Farewell. He then fell a howling ſo loud, that he awaked;—— and ſeeing me, (for I would have avoided him if I could) what is the Matter, *Will.* ſays I? He ſtood like an Image, and looking full at me, did you ſee them, ſays he? Who, ſays I? My Mother, and the Devil, ſays he, they came in before

before me.——Poe, ſays I, you have been in a Dream, Man, Is that all, ſays he? Rather than have ſuch another, I would never ſleep again whilſt I live:—But did you ſee nobody come before me? No, I'll promiſe you, ſays I, there was nobody here but yourſelf. Go, go to Bed again.

I would gladly have been free from his Company, for he looked ſo ghaſtly, I could not bear to behold him; and though I did all I could to keep up my Spirits, I was ready to ſink with the Fright; but all my Perſuaſions would not prevail with him to lie down again; ſo we made a Can of Flip, and ſat together till Morning; but after this, I never watched in the Night, but I locked myſelf into the Cabin, and only went now and then on Deck to look out, and ſhut my Door after me; neither could I ſleep on Nights or Days in Comfort, for fear of him, for he ſtalked about like a wild Man, in the utmoſt Horror and Anguiſh; and in about ten Days more, he ſhot himſelf into the Body, with a Piſtol he found loaded in the Maſter's Cabin. The Report of the Piſtol ſhocked me prodigiouſly; but hearing him groan ſeveral Times, I could not avoid enquiring into the Cauſe, when I gave him what Aſſiſtance I was able, and the Wound not being mortal, by the Help of one Thing or other, that I found in the Maſter's Cheſt, I recovered him, in about three Weeks, and

and after that, I began not to be ſo fearful of him, as I had been before, for the poor Fellow expreſſed himſelf ever after, with great Tenderneſs and Reſpect for me, and I believe, loved *Jack*, (as he always called me) as well as himſelf; but he had ſeveral more Freeks during our Stay together, and laboured, no doubt, under great Diſorder, upon the Reflection of his paſt Life.

CHAP. XI.

Are out at Sea three Months. The Author being on Watch, ſpies a Sail. Faſtens Spencer *into his Cabin. Makes Signals. Dreſſes herſelf in the late Captain's Cloaths, and is taken on Board a* Portugueſe *Veſſel. Releaſes* Spencer. *His villainous Thoughts. Captain's Civility to the Author. Becomes Servant to the Governor of* Parnambuco's *Lady, who is a Paſſenger. Tells the Lady her Story. Puts on Woman's Dreſs. Account of her Wealth. Deſcription of her Maſter, Don* Cortez Paboia.

WE had now been (according to our Computation) three Months at Sea, but had never ſeen any Veſſel near enough to make a Signal to, that might be ſeen or heard; for

for though we had ſix great Guns on Board, we neither of us knew how to manage them, or had the Courage to fire one of them, tho' we had fired ſeveral Piſtols; but at laſt, about Nine o'Clock, as near as I could gueſs, in the Morning, when *Will.* was juſt gone to ſleep, in a Cabin he choſe under Deck, I eſpyed a Sail at a vaſt Diſtance: We had ſeveral ſpying Glaſſes, and theſe I could make Uſe of; ſo I ran for one, and viewing the Ship, to my Thinking it bore down directly upon us, and in an Hour more, I could ſee its Sails, and how they were ſet, with my naked Eye, and perceived her to come on at a great Rate; as for our Ship, we had neither Maſt or Sail ſtanding, but being well loaded, ſhe kept ſteady. When I found that the Ship gained very faſt towards me, I was afraid *Will.* would be ſtirring, before I could call to her (for I had lived in a conſtant Dread of his Murdering me, whenever he ſhould hope to eſcape himſelf, for fear I ſhould diſcover his Villany) ſo I crept down ſoftly beneath Deck, and locked him gently into the Cabin, then I rolled ſeveral Bales of Goods againſt the Door; and laſtly, when I was ſure he could not readily force his Way out, I got ſome Spikes, and nailed him in, on both Sides of the Door.

All the while I was hammering, he ſtormed and raved, and bounced at the Door to get out, but

but to no Purpoſe, ſtill calling aloud to me, who gave him not one Word in Anſwer. I then got upon Deck, ſhutting the Hatch, and nailing it down very ſtrong: By this Time the Ship was within a Mile of us, and I ſet up a Hat upon a Piece of a Maſt that was left ſtanding, and fired a Piſtol, and kept hallowing to them as loud as I could, till they anſwered me, and bore down directly upon me.

I had often viewed what Things the Maſter had in his Lockers and Cheſts, and had ſeen ſeveral Suits of Cloaths there, and other Things which I now thought to make Uſe of, for I could not bear to diſcover myſelf as a Woman to them, neither did I approve the Highland Habit; ſo I immediately accoutered myſelf in the Cloaths I liked beſt, and threw away my Plaid, ſecured all the Caſh, with ſome Plate I found there in a Cheſt, and by the Time they came up, I appeared in my full *Engliſh*, or rather *Iriſh* Dreſs: I begged to ſpeak with the Captain, and deſired he would ſend his Boat, and take me on Board. The Captain ſeeing me genteely cloathed, and what a miſerable Condition our Ship was in, ordered out his Boat for me; I went on Board him, and relating our Diſtreſs, and the Occaſion of it, he took great Compaſſion of me, though I found he underſtood me not, but by an Interpreter. I then told him, we had a full Loading on Board, which, if he pleaſed, he

he might take, leaving me but a ſmall Matter which was my own Property, for I ſhould be ſufficiently obliged to him for my Life. He was then ſending his Mate on Board us, when I deſired to return with him, in order to fetch away my own Baggage. I had nine *Portugueſe* and an *Engliſh* Man with me (for it was a *Portugueſe* Ship). When we came on Board, we broke up the Hatch, and I deſired them all to ſtay there, till I went between Decks, and returned again. I then went to *Will*'s Cabin-Door, called him, and aſked him if he would come out? But *Will.* having heard what we were at, ſhewed now but little Inclination for moving, leſt I ſhould have diſcovered him; but I aſſured him, I neither had, or would, and even went ſo far, as to ſwear to it.

Will. no ſooner believed he might truſt me, than he begged me to releaſe him, which I did, and then falling upon his Knees to me, "O, *Jack*, ſays he, the beſt Job you ever did in your Life, both for yourſelf, and me, was the locking me into this Cabin; how ſo, ſays I, why, ſays he, I had determined long in my Mind to have killed you, the firſt Proſpect I had had of a Deliverance, leſt you ſhould have diſcovered my Roguery; but now you have ſworn you won't, at a Time too, that you might ſafely have done it, I am ſatisfied. I then told him, I had had ſuch a Gueſs for ſome Time, which was the Reaſon of

what

what I did; I am glad of it, ſays he, for I ſhould certainly have murdered you, and yet I would not have done it for the World, but for my own Security. Well, keep your Peace, ſays I, and I ſhall keep mine. I then called down the *Portugueſe*, ſhewed them the Goods, and ordering all that was in the Maſter's Cabbin, to be ſhipt for my own Uſe, gave them the Pillage of the reſt. And *Will* having made up his Bundle too, as he told me, we went with the Return of the Boat, on board the *Portugueſe*, and entered our Ship no more.

The *Portugueſe* Captain obſerving my Dreſs and Behaviour, above the common run of Sailors, enquired into my Station; I told him I was of a noble Family in *England*, and that an unlucky Accident had put me on board that Ship, in which we had been toſſed about for ſeveral Months, till he was ſo good to relieve me. He ſeemed very attentive, and then taking me into his Cabbin, preſented me to his Lady, and to another Lady who was with her, telling me at the ſame Time, that I ſhould meſs with him, his Dinner being juſt then ſetting on the Table.

After Dinner, I perceived that one of the Ladies could ſpeak *Engliſh*, and ſhe was as glad as myſelf to meet with one that could do the like; I found by her, that ſhe was a Relation of a Roman Catholick Family in *Eſſex*, who had been ſent to *France* for Education, and deſigned for a Nun;

Nun; but ſhe told me, that before ſhe had taken the Vow, her preſent Huſband having ſeen her, and ſolliciting for her Diſcharge, had obtained it of her Relations, and married her, he being a *Portugueſe*; ſhe ſaid they were only Paſſengers in that Ship, in which her Huſband was going Governor of a *Portugueſe* Settlement in the *Weſt Indies*; but that he was at preſent ill in Bed, in his Cabbin. She ſeemed a mighty good Woman, and I aſked her if ſhe had not a Maid Servant with her; ſhe told me ſhe had one, and ſhould have had another, but ſhe was too ill to come on Board. My Heart leaped at this, and it came into my Mind, that it was the luckieſt Thing that could have happened to me; for it would be a Proviſion for me when on Shore, if I could but get into her Service: So I immediately told her, if ſhe wanted a Servant, I could be very glad to recommend one to her; can ſhe ſpeak *Portugueſe*, ſays ſhe? I told her, ſince herſelf could ſpeak ſo good *Engliſh*, I hoped that might compenſate for her want of *Portugueſe*, till ſhe had an Opportunity of perfecting herſelf in it. Pray, Sir, ſays the Lady, are you acquainted at the *Brazils?* No Madam, ſays I, I never was there in my Life. Then how can you take upon you to recommend a Servant, of a People you know not, ſays ſhe? Madam, I can pawn my Life for the Heart of the Perſon I could wiſh to ſerve you, ſaid I, and for her Deſire of

pleaſing,

pleaſing, Madam, proceeded I, the very Perſon you are ſo kind to indulge with your Converſation, is her that I would offer to your Acceptance. I know not what you mean Sir, replied ſhe, I hope you take me for a Lady of Honour, and not to be trifled with; and if I cannot, I'll aſſure you the Governor can vindicate it. I was afraid I had proceeded too far, but was now for my Reputation Sake, obliged to go on. Madam, I humbly beg Pardon, for covering my Speech, ſays I, in a Veil of Obſcurity; but I am really a Woman, though I have been for ſome Months obliged to diſguiſe my Sex, for my own Security; and when I ſhall have given you my Reaſons for it, I doubt not, but yourſelf will look upon it, as a great Step towards my Capacity of ſerving you faithfully.

She looked very ſteadily upon me, and told me, if I was in Earneſt, ſhe deſired I would proceed in my Narration; for that no one elſe preſent underſtood any *Engliſh* but herſelf.

I began with ſetting forth my virtuous Education, under my Mother; but without diſcovering who ſhe was, and my Amour with *David*, my being carried off, and all that had happened to me, till received into her Ship; concluding, that as I was ſo far from Home, and amongſt Strangers, if ſhe would pleaſe to enrole me among her Domeſticks, I ſhould eſteem all my paſt Adventures,

tues, as joyful Preludes to the Happineſs I promiſed myſelf in her Service.

And is all this really true that you tell me, ſays ſhe? Litterally true, as I hope for better Days, ſays I, Madam; it is true to a Scruple.

I'm ſorry, ſays ſhe, you have appeared in this Dreſs, in the Ship; but if I receive you into my Service, you muſt immediately change it. I told her, ſhe would underſtand by my Relation, that I had no other; but if I could be ſo happy to procure one, I ſhould think myſelf bleſſed indeed. She inſtantly called her Maid, and whiſpering her in *Portugueſe*, bid me follow her. The poor Wench ſtood confounded, and durſt not ſtir a Foot, ſtill ſtaring at me; till her Miſtreſs again Whiſpering her, ſhe beckoned me, and I went with her.

We both went into a little Room, where the Maid lay, and there ſhe ſhewed me ſeveral of her Miſtreſſes caſt Cloaths, pointing to me, to chooſe which I would. I ſoon fixed upon one, which I judged would expreſs my Modeſty beſt, and yet ſhew my Fancy, and was going to undreſs and ſhift me, but the poor Creature, the Maid, pointed to me to ſtay till ſhe was gone, which I imagining not to be altogether ſo prudent (for I choſe to have no miſtruſtful Surmiſes remain, of my being what I really was not) I pulled her, and made her ſit on the Bed, till I was entirely equipped; and indeed,

indeed, if I had not, I ſhould have been at ſome Loſs in diſpoſing my Affairs, for I was unacquainted with the Uſe of ſome Part of the Dreſs, which ſhe aſſiſted me in; when I was compleated, we both went into the great Cabbin, and preſented ourſelves to our Miſtreis, who ſurveying me from Head to Foot; good Lord! ſays ſhe, what an Alteration can Dreſs make?

The Captain's Lady, who had ſeen me before in Man's Cloaths, knew not the leaſt of me now, and aſked my Lady, how ſhe came by another Maid? and if I was found in the Ship they were unloading? Yes, *Donna*, ſays ſhe, this is Part of the Cargoe.——When my Lady had done with me, we Maids were ordered out about our Buſineſs, and from henceforth I became Companion to *Maria*, which was the Name of my fellow Servant.

I had then by me, about Seventy large Pieces of Gold, which were the late Maſter's of the Veſſel, beſides all his Cloaths, about twenty Pounds worth of Plate, and eight or ten Watches, Gold and Silver, which I ſuppoſe he had taken for Traffick, with all which I looked upon myſelf as a tolerable Fortune.

As nothing material happened to me, till we were ſettled, and had been two or three Years at the *Brazils*, I ſhall only juſt hint at my Employment for that Time.

My

My Maſter's Indiſpoſition being but ſlight, in two Days he came into the great Cabin, and was pretty well again; and my Lady having preſented me to him, and informed him of my Story, he was ſo affected with it, that only a Repetition of it from my own Mouth would ſatisfy him: This I went punctually through, my Lady interpreting Sentence by Sentence after me. He aſked Abundance of Queſtions, which my Lady expounding to me, I anſwered much to his Satisfaction; and he ſeemed ſo delighted with my Adventures, that ever after, while I ſtayed with him, he would, as I was at Work for my Lady, ſtart ſome Queſtion or other, relating to me. He was of about forty-five Years of Age, named *Paboia*, and was of an antient Family in *Portugal*; was very ſprightly, and of a fine Temper, but lofty.

CHAP. XII.

Account of their Arrival in the Brazils. Arrival of her Maſter's Son Don Henriques, *and his two Siſters. Their Diverſions. Courted by Don* Henriques. *Denies him. He grows melancholy. The Author, to avoid his Importunities, reſolves to leave the Family. Diſcourſe thereon with her Lady. Tells her the Reaſon. She commends her. Don* Paboia *orders her away. Her Lady's Kindneſs. Goes on board a Ship her Maſter had provided her.*

UPON our Arrival, the Governor's Palace was like a Fair for a long Time, with Viſitants of all Sorts; and ſeveral petty Governors, who held under him, came with prodigious Trains attending them: This held ſome Months, but at laſt Matters grew compoſed, and we lived very ſplendidly and happy, as every one muſt, whilſt under the Direction of my Lady, who treated her whole Family more like her Children, than Dependants.

I had, with the Aſſiſtance of *Maria*, attained to a reaſonable Notion of the *Portugueſe* Tongue; for I laboured very hard to acquire it, and was ſo well pleaſed with the Country, the Family and

and the People, that I had no Notion of ever leaving either.

About two Years after I had been there, my Maſter's Son arrived from *Portugal*, having ſtayed behind at my Maſter's firſt coming, to compleat his School Exerciſes and Accompliſhments; he brought over two of his Siſters with him, who had been left behind on the ſame Account, both younger than himſelf, who was juſt then twenty Years of Age.

The young Gentleman and Ladies ſoon wanted to ſee the Country, and either upon Land, or Water, made frequent Excurſions for their Amuſement, having always a choſen Guard with them. After the young Ladies Arrival (having before informed my Miſtreſs that I was a great Lover of Children, and had been much uſed to them) I was appointed to take Care of, and wait upon them as their Companion, and very fond they were of me, ſo that few Diverſions went forward, but I was a Partaker.

Being a conſtant Attendant on the young Ladies, and conſequently obliged to be very much in the Company of Don *Henriques*, (for that was the Name of my Maſter's Son) he became enamoured with me, and had as frequently informed me of it as he had found Opportunity, which put me very much upon my Guard how I ever was in his Company alone. I always treated his Addreſſes with a Repulſe, telling

him, that People in my Country, who had received virtuous Educations, valued their Reputations too much, to admit of criminal Converſe with any Man; and aſſured him, if he did not deſiſt from all further Attempts upon me, I would inform my Lady, and Maſter, let what would be the Conſequence of it.

All that I could ſay, had but very little Effect upon him; his Paſſion, he ſaid, was ſo ſtrong for me, that he could not bear the Thoughts of Life without me, and would fain have procured my Promiſe to marry him, but I abſolutely refuſed without his Father's Conſent: At laſt perceiving me immoveable to all his Rhetorick, and that whatever Stratagems he had formed to ſurprize me, I had always counterplotted and eſcaped him, deſpairing of attaining his Wiſhes, he grew indolent, and drooped about for near three Months, and then fell ſo ill, that he could not ſtir out of his Chamber.

I own, my Concern for his then State of Health, and knowing myſelf to be the Cauſe of it, gave me a deep Depreſſion, for I had fixed my Principle never to conſent to any criminal Embraces; and being very well aſſured, that my Preſence only enflamed his Diſorder, and that his Father would as willingly ſee him dead, as to marry ſo much beneath himſelf, I determined to leave the Family, and return to *England* again, being, in Money and Effects, one how or other,

other, as I had computed it, worth about two hundred Pounds Sterling. As Don *Henriques* grew worſe, my Reſolutions grew the ſtronger; and one Day taking the Advantage of my Lady alone, I humbly thanked her for the many undeſerved Favours ſhe had beſtowed on me, for the four Years I had been in her Service, and humbly begged ſhe would permit me, by the firſt Shipping, to return to *Europe*, to my native Country.

I thought I had expreſſed myſelf, with only that Concern in my Countenance, which might atteſt the Truth of my Inclination and Requeſt; but whether I did or not, my Lady diſcovered ſomething more in my Demand, than a bare hankering after Home; ſhe told me, ſhe wondered at my Deſire of leaving her ſo ſuddenly; ſhe had always uſed me with the Tenderneſs of a Relation; thought her Daughters ſafer under my Care than any one's, and hoped that my Conditon with her, being ſo eaſy, nothing but Death would have parted us, ſo long as ſhe ſhould continue in the *Brazils*.

I could not but confeſs her Favours, and the Satisfaction my Situation in her Family had given me; but told her, my Inclination now tending Homewards, I could not reſt ſatisfied without going.

Patty, ſays ſhe, I can diſcover by your Looks, there is ſomething more in all this Harangue of your's than I am appriſed of; you want not to

return to *England*, only for the Sake of being there; I am ſure ſomething has made you uneaſy, and I inſiſt upon your diſcloſing it to me.

I now ſtood quite Confounded; don't bluſh ſo, ſays ſhe, for I muſt and will know what it is; you are ſenſible I Love you, next to my own Children, and I require it of you as your Duty, to unboſom to me whatever it is that has created your Uneaſineſs; for I very well perceive, you are top full of ſomething that lies heavy upon your Mind.

Dear Madam, ſays I, yourſelf will acquit me I believe, of having ever told you a Lye ſince I have ſerved you.—— I will indeed, ſays ſhe. — Then Madam, as whatever I may ſay to you muſt be the Truth; if it ſhould be ungrateful for you to hear, and Diſquiet for me to repeat, had not my Silence better keep you, and myſelf both, free from any Diſturbance? You cannot look at me from henceforth, though I ſhall endeavour to view you, in the ſame Light we have both before beheld each other; then good Madam, don't urge me to what may deſtroy the preſent Harmony ſubſiſting between us, but as we came together in Good-will, let us part in each other's Eſteem.

What I had ſaid, but inflamed my Lady's Curioſity the more, for the Knowledge of my Secret; when aſſuring me, that nothing but a deliberate ill Act of mine, to the detriment of herſelf

herſelf and Family, ſhould ever alter her Regard for me, and that whatever it was, ſhe would judge impartially, and not without my Conſent diſcover it to my Maſter; I told her, how happy I thought myſelf in falling into her Family, and the Proſpect I had hoped I had of continuing in it; but that of late, I had perceived myſelf to be better reſpected in it, than became my Station. How! ſays my Lady, I hope my Huſband has made you no baſe Offers? I think he is a more virtuous Man? No Madam, ſays I, no, never in his Life, but I muſt tell you, that Don *Henriques* has ſollicited me, almoſt ever ſince he has been here. I hope, ſays my Lady, you have not complied with him; no Madam, ſays I, I have ever repulſed his Attacks, and am now well aſſured, his preſent Diſorder is wholly owing to my Neglect of him; I therefore leave you to judge, Madam, whether I ſhall not, by quitting your Service, and returning to *England*, remove the Cauſe of your Son's Diſtemper, and whatever Inconvenience I may ſuffer by it myſelf, reſtore Peace to your Family.

I am amazed at thy Virtue, Child, ſays my Lady, and at the Conduct that appears in you, far beyond your Years; you have gone through ſo many Difficulties for the Time you have lived in the World, that I am ſorry to think of your encountering more; but pray, ſays ſhe, tell me truly, have all the Profeſſions of Love my

Son has made you, cauſed no Impreſſion on your Heart towards him? Here, my Miſtreſs told me I bluſhed immoderately; come, ſays ſhe, I perceive you are not unſuſceptible of Love then, yourſelf: Well, be it ſo, your Virtue but gains a Luſtre from it; and truly, I who have had my Education primarily in *England*, ſhould have no Scruple of giving you to my Son to Wife; but fear Don *Paboia* will make a greater Difficulty of it; however, reſt eaſy ſome Time, take no Notice of our Diſcourſe to any one, till you hear more from me; but don't fall into my Son's Way, before I ſee you. I promiſed I would not, and ſo we parted.

I heard no more of it for about three Weeks, when my Lady calling me to her, told me, with Tears in her Eyes, that I muſt pack up my Things and be gone: Perceiving me about to reply, ſay no more, ſays ſhe ,for it is Don *Paboia*'s Orders, which I am not to diſpute; I wiſh you well, ſays ſhe, with all my Heart, and ſafe to our Native Land; ſhe then told me, there was ſome little Matters due to me, but putting her Hand into her Pocket, take this, ſays ſhe, (which was much more than ſhe owed me) and remember me; then burſting into Tears, ſhe turned from me.

Her Tenderneſs to me, rent my Heart in Pieces; I was now involved in Millions of turbulent Suggeſtions, which ſtifled each other in the

the Birth, and wrought me up to the Extremity of Confuſion; but go I muſt, and what was worſt of all, without once ſeeing Don *Henriques*; for I muſt own, I from my Soul adored him, though I could never have conſented to his Deſires in an unlawful Way. Whilſt I was in this Confuſion packing up my Things, *Maria* came to me from my Maſter, to tell me that a Ship he was concerned in, would ſail the next Morning, to the Slave Coaſt, for Slaves; and that I muſt this Night go on Board him, who had Orders to get me convoyed ſafe to *England*, my Maſter having agreed for, and paid my Paſſage.

I told her I would obey, and begged her to help me pack up, which ſhe did, and when all was ready, having taken my Leave of her, and committed my Goods to ſome Slaves to carry to the Ship, I departed; but with a heavy Heart indeed, for it ran ſtrongly in my Mind, that my Maſter had given the Captain Orders to ſell me for a Slave: However, I truſted in that Providence, which hitherto had always preſerved me, and doubted not of his future Favours.

CHAP. XIII.

The Captain Caſtello's *civil Uſage of the Author on Board, and on the Slave Coaſt. Meet with a* Briſtol *Ship at* Sceira Leon, *and ſhe goes on Board it. Are taken by a Corſair. The Captain of the Corſair makes the Author his Prize. The Author's Diſcourſe with the Pirate Captain. Her miſerable Circumſtances. Is going to ſhoot herſelf. Her Reſolution. The Captain's Attempts. She terrifies him by her Diſcourſe. He leaves her diſcontented. Sees her no more that Night. Her Reflections. He attacks her Chaſtity again. Is repulſed by her Reaſonings. Never offers to miſuſe her after. Are taken by an* Engliſh *Man of War, and carried to* Leghorn.

I Lay on Board that Night, and indeed was better accommodated than in my Station I could have expected; and Don *Juan Caſtello* our Captain, invited me into his Cabin at Breakfaſt time, and told me he had Orders for my Meſſing with him; I thanked him, and ſat down to Breakfaſt, and about Noon we were under Sail, and before next Morning were out of Sight of Land.

The Captain behaved with the greateſt Civility to me during the Voyage, as alſo whilſt we ſtayed

ſtayed on the *Slave* Coaſt; but meeting with no Ship there, proper to carry me to *England*, I embarked with him for *America* again. He had Orders for touching at *Sceira Leone* and there we met the *Nightingal*, Captain *Cluff*, juſt putting to Sea, bound to *Briſtol*, with whom he agreed, and paying for my Paſſage thither, I took my Leave of Captain *Caſtello*, and went on Board the *Nightingal*. After ſome Weeks Sail, having paſſed the *Canaries*, we met with a *Dutch* Ship, who hailing us, informed us, that there was a Corſair a-head of us, with whom he had juſt engaged; and, though he had received ſo much Damage, that he muſt put in to refit, yet, that having done the Corſair much more, he had obliged him to ſheer off. Our Captain had thirty-two Hands on Board, with Paſſengers, and he adviſed with them what he ſhould do. They all inſiſted upon fighting, and did not fear coming off clear at leaſt, having a good tight Ship under them, and well ſupplied: So we made all the Sail we could forward, with a Quarter-Wind; but before we loſt Sight of the Veſſel that informed us of the Corſair, we ſaw him bearing down upon us with a ſlack Wind, and we ſoon came up with, and ran by him; but he tacking about very readily, we perceived he had not been ſo great a Sufferer as was reported; for being light, and we heavy laoded, he preſently came up with us, and ſoon made us his

Prize,

Prize, even in Sight of the Ship who had been our Informers.

Several of us, and myſelf amongſt the reſt, were carried on Board the Captor, where being the only Woman in the two Ships, I feared I ſhould have been pulled to Pieces by them, till the Commander laid Hands on me, and ordered me to his Cabin, as his Prize.

Here, it would be needleſs to deſcribe the violent Agonies, and the Terror of what I every Moment expected would befal me; for the Captain did not return to me in full two Hours, till he had ſettled all Matters relating to his Prize.

When he came in, though he looked very pleaſantly upon me, I trembled, as if I had ſeen a Lyon, and falling on my Knees, begged him in the moſt moving Manner I was able, to be my Protector; telling him, that as he ſeemed to be a very humane Gentleman himſelf, I hoped he would not ſuffer any of his Crew to injure me. No, he ſaid, he would not, but that I ſhould live with him, and be his conſtant Companion in his Travels. He wanted, he ſaid, a *Britiſh* Woman for his Mate a great while, and with a thundring Oath, now, ſays he, I have got one. I wondered to hear him ſpeak *Engliſh*, but his Dialect preſently diſcovered him to be a *North-Briton*.

I ſtood confounded at his Speech, but had nothing but Prayers and Crying, to aſſiſt myſelf with, which make no more Impreſſion on theſe Sort of Brutes, than Mirth, and Jollity. They know themſelves Maſters, and will be obeyed, right or wrong, by Entreaty or Violence. Come, come, Country-Woman, ſays he, dry up your Tears, I'll maintain you better than ever you lived in your Life. Are you a married Woman? I knew not what would be beſt to ſay, but told him no; oh, ſays he, a Maid I'll warrant you: Come then, ſays he, I'll teach you how to live in the World; then taking me about the Neck, and kiſſing me; ſo, ſo, ſays he, we ſhall be better acquainted, after a Night's Lodging or two together; but you young Wenches love to do nothing raſhly: Here, ſays he, take a Dram, raiſe your Spirits, and dry up your Tears, and conſider of it till I come again; then, after compelling me to drink it, he left me.

Now, or never, I ſtood in Need of ſuperior Aid: O! thinks I, how much more deplorable is my Condition now, in the Hands of this Wretch, than it was at *C——r——k*-Caſtle! O that I had been left with *Biddy* upon the Rocks! Either I ſhould have been relieved by ſomebody, near my own Soil, or long before now have periſhed there, and then there had been an End of me, then I had not been this wretched Being, capable of ſo much Miſery. I had

had Thoughts of deſtroying myſelf, ſeeing two or three Brace of Piſtols hanging up in the Cabin, and was taking one down; for having fired one off ſeveral Times, as a Signal on Board my firſt Ship, I was expert enough at it: But then poor *Biddy*'s Words came into my Mind, and reſtrained my Hand from Self-deſtruction: But, ſays I, if I reſiſt this Brute, till I either ſtruggle to Death, or compel him, for Vexation, to diſpatch me; ſure in ſuch a Caſe I ſhall be guiltleſs; but then, thinks I, he has ſo many at his Command, as bad Brutes as himſelf, that I may be ſubdued with little Labour. Thus I revolved in my own Breaſt, every ſeeming Probability that might befal me; but at laſt, found myſelf no nearer any Means of eſcaping Violence, than I was before; ſo falling on my Knees, I inſiſted upon the Uprightneſs of my Intentions, to preſerve myſelf virtuous, to the utmoſt of my Ability; I implored a ſuperior Aid, either upon myſelf to reſiſt, or upon my Tyrant to curb his Brutality, and melt his Heart to Compaſſion for me; or elſe I prayed the Almighty to take me to himſelf, before I ſhould be a Witneſs of my ſuffering Innocence. I know not how it was, but I had no ſooner ariſen from my Knees, but I felt a Compoſure of my Spirits, that I had been before a Stranger to, and certain Words of *David* occurred to my Mind, with a vaſt deal of Pleaſure, to wit;

Why

Why art thou caſt down, O my Soul? And why art thou diſquieted within me? Truſt in God. Theſe Words, and the Thought of them, took ſuch entire Poſſeſſion of me, that I believe I mentally repeated them above five hundred Times that Day, growing at laſt quiet, even to Security.

At laſt, my Tyrant entring the Cabin, and whiſtling to himſelf, told me, we would go to Supper; and then, my Laſs, ſays he, I'll try what Metal you are made of.——He pauſed a little, and obſerving me not to cry, as I had done before, but to ſeem more compoſed; come, kiſs me, ſays he, now this is right, as it ſhould be; I thought, when you had reflected a little, you would think my Conditions not ſo hard: Is it not better for thee and I to live quietly, and love and delight each other, than for you to be held down by four dirty Fellows, whilſt I take my Will of you, and perhaps, for the Difficulty you ſhould put me to, give you up to the Abuſes of the whole Ship's Crew? Now I ſhall enjoy thee indeed.

Sir, ſays I, don't you believe there is a Supreme Being, who has made you and me, and preſerves us both, and has given us a known Law to guide our Actions by, and who will puniſh us for Diſobedience to thoſe Laws! I'll be hanged, ſays he, if thou haſt not been bred a *Scotch* Parſon, or at leaſt one of their Baſtards.

No,

No, Sir, ſays I, I never was in *Scotland*, but contrary to my own Inclination; but don't you believe what I ſay to be true! Prithee, ſays he, don't catechiſe me, I am not of your Faith: But, ſays I, if you was born in *Scotland*, as you ſay, you was once of my Faith, whatever you may be now. I'll hear no more of this Stuff, ſays he: Pray Sir, ſays I, what is your preſent Faith? I'm a *Mahometan*, replyed he; and does that warrant you in debauching Women againſt their Will, ſays I? I'll tell you, ſays he, I'll hear no more of your Nonſenſe. Sir, ſays I, you muſt, and ſhall hear what I have to ſay for myſelf, as well as you oblige me to hear what you have to ſay; and I tell you, Sir, that if you was born in *Scotland*, you muſt have heard of ſuch a Book as the Goſpel, and muſt probably have believed it to be the true Guide to Heaven, and muſt have heard, that there is a Hell, for thoſe who are excluded thence; and that it is our acting counter to the Precepts of that Goſpel, which ſubjects us to Hell, to be eternally puniſhed there, for not ſtriving, with all our Force, to ſubdue thoſe Luſts, which render us unworthy of Heaven. This I will tell you, Sir, whether you believe it or not; and, though my Body is in your Power, I have a Soul that waits for, and ſeeks Heaven, whitherto it is in my Power to ſend it, but not in your's to prevent it. I am, by our Law in that Goſ-

pel,

pel, enjoyned to preſerve my Virtue; and, as no one can do that longer than Life remains, if you urge me to the Experiment, I will leave you this poor Carcaſs lifeleſs, to act your Pleaſure upon.

My Obſervation of his Countenance, at the firſt Mention of the Goſpel, gave me the Boldneſs to proceed as I did; for he began with changing Colour; and I had no ſooner done, than I found him very uneaſy; he would have replyed, and aimed at it, but could bring nothing out; ſo riſing from his Seat, with a ſmothered Sigh, he quitted the Cabin. I profeſs, my very Heart went with him; for, though I had ſtung him to the Quick, and hoped ſome Benefit from it, yet I could not avoid pitying him.

I had now waited two Hours more by myſelf, and no one coming, I had Abundance of Apprehenſions concerning ſo unlikely an Event, and, indeed, ſuſpected he had been contriving ſome Means to uſe Force upon me, without permitting me to act any Violence upon myſelf; but then, came in a Meſſenger from him, with Notice to me, that the Captain being gone to Bed diſordered, he had ſent me Word, that his Cabin was at my Service, and alſo his Bed, for the Night: And the Meſſenger aſked me, if I would eat any Thing? I thanked him, telling him, the leaſt Bit of Bread would be ſufficient

for

for me. I thought my Doubts ſeemed better grounded now, than before, and I was perſuaded that Force would be the Iſſue of it. Whilſt I was in this Agitation of Mind, the ſame Perſon brought me half a cold Fowl, ſome Biſket, and Wine, and Water, and laying a Knife and Fork, which he took out of a Locker in the Cabin, ſaid, he would wait on me when I had done.

I was thinking not to eat, or at leaſt but a Piece of Bread; but if I am to receive Violence, ſays I, it is neceſſary I ſhould receive Strength to reſiſt it; wherefore I fed very heartily, and having drank what I pleaſed, all was carried away again. I now began to think, whether I ſhould lie down or not; and, upon weighing all Circumſtances, reſolved to do it, but not to ſtrip off my Cloaths. I therefore locked the Cabin Door, taking the Key within-ſide, then viewing the Partition, to ſee if that could eaſily be taken down without Noiſe, and ſearching round and under the Bed, if all was ſafe, I committed myſelf to Providence, tying my Garter to the Latch of my Bed-room Door, and pinning it tight to my Gown, that I might be ſure to wake readily, upon the leaſt Noiſe or Stir.

I purpoſed only to refreſh my Limbs, by lying along, for I reſolved not to ſleep; but alas! what weak Creatures are we, in Oppoſition to Nature;

Nature; for being very much fatigued with my Troubles and Anxieties, the whole Day before, I fell into the ſweeteſt Repoſe, I had ever enjoyed, and waking in the Dark, at full Morning, could not for a long Time tell where I was, till the Tranſactions of the paſt Day recurred to me, and then I returned hearty Thanks for my paſt Deliverance.

I ſaw no more of the Captain till Noon, when he very civilly and modeſtly came in, enquiring after my Health and Reſt, and dined with me; after which, he began to unfold his Deſires again, though in a new Model, growing at length very importunate with me, but yet in a much modeſter Way than before. I told him, it would for ever be in vain for him to attempt my Conſent to what that great Power, who was Witneſs, not only to my Actions, but to my very Thoughts, had forbidden me: It is, ſays I, committing an Act in Defiance of the Supream Being, and daring him to be a Spectator of it, to do ſuch a Thing againſt his Will, while I am deliberating that it is ſo. I will allow, ſays I, Perſons may inadvertently commit a raſh Act, which, had they reflected on before, no Force could have compelled them to, and that may meet Forgiveneſs; but what leſs than a Thunderbolt, to ſtrike us to Death, and Damnation, can we expect, who contemptuouſly

ſhall

ſhall ſlight the Warnings of the Almighty, in the very Action?

Before I had done with him, the Tears ran trickling down his Checks, and that I might take no further Notice of him, he aroſe from me, and left the Cabin; nor did I ſee any more of him till the following Noon; nor, while I ſtayed in the Ship, did I hear the leaſt wrong Word from him, or any further Offer againſt me.

I could not help reflecting, how many uſeful and worthy Men are loſt to the World, for Want of right Application of the Reaſon committed to them; for when ſuch a reaſonable Perſon happens to fix on bad Companions, as his Superiority of Merit will ſet him at their Head, he has no other Way to preſerve it, but by being ſuperlatively vicious; and this I verily believe to have been the Caſe of the Gentleman I am now ſpeaking of.

He had taken ſo ſtrong a Liking to me, that I believe, had I been with him till this Time, he would never more have attempted my Chaſtity; and we ſeemed from henceforth highly agreeable in our Sentiments to each other; for he ſpent greateſt Part of his Time with me; nay, I had obtained his Promiſe of my Freedom, when he arrived at *Algiers*, (whither he was going, he ſaid) if he could not ſooner tranſmit me ſafe to *England*.

But

But to proceed in my Narration, we lived very ſatisfactorily together, till we came to the *Streights* Mouth; when, a Sail, a Sail, was called out, and immediately all Hands were on Deck, to deſcry it. They reſolved to make up, and attack it, which they did; but it proved a Tartar, for it was an *Engliſh* Twenty-Gun Ship, which was then going to join a Fleet in the *Mediterranean*, who run us aboard, and, after a ſtout Reſiſtance, took us Priſoners, and carried us to *Leghorn*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Her Goods reſtored by the Captors. Reſolves to get a Service at Leghorn. *Gets Acquaintance there. Has Thoughts of Returning to* England. *Meets with* Biddy. *Their Greeting. Takes her and Captain* Powell *her Husband, to her Lodgings. Miſerable Account of what befel* Biddy *after the Author left her on the Rock. Her Deliverance by Captain* Powell. *Her Inability to work as a Sailor. The Mate complains of her to Captain* Powell. *She diſcovers her Sex. He makes her his Servant. Procures her a Woman's Dreſs at the* Cape of Good-Hope. *The Courtſhip. He marries her. Rejoycings on Board. Arrive at* Bengal. *Return to* Copenhagen. *Thence come to* Leghorn. *Character of Captain* Powell. *The Captain is bound to* Venice. *The Author informs* Biddy *what had befallen her.*

WHEN our Ship was taken, I was conveyed on Board the Man of War, and was at firſt afraid, I ſhould have been worſe uſed there, than on Board the Corſair; finding great Difficulty to make the Captain believe I was not a *Moor*, but only Priſoner; till, on Examination of

of the whole Crew, I was acquitted, and received the moſt polite Treatment.

At *Leghorn*, I begged I might be allowed to have my own Effects, which had been taken from me by the *Algerines*, and as a great Favour obtained them; I took a Lodging in the Town; for, now I was once more at Liberty, it ſeemed equal to me, where I was, having no Relations in *England* but my Father, and I had given over all Thoughts of Viſiting him; for, thinks I, after ſo long Abſence, if he ever had any Affection for me, it is worn out, or he may take the long Story I ſhall tell him, for a Fiction, or worſe; ſo I contented myſelf with ſubmitting to a Service ſomewhere; and, could I have procured one to my liking at *Leghorn*, I ſhould have ſet down contented.

I had here the Converſation of ſeveral *Engliſh* People, but more eſpecially, as we had at that Time a Fleet in the *Mediteranean*, ſome or other of them were perpetually coming in there, and I had collected a tolerable Acquaintance in the Town; for, though I could not ſpeak *Italian*, I had learnt a great deal of *French* in my late Service, and the Captain of the Corſair, whoſe Name was *David Farquharſon*, talking exceeding good *French*, we held ſeveral Days Conference in it; and from that, and the *Portugueſe*, which I was a tolerable Miſtreſs of, I could underſtand

almoſt

almoſt any Thing in the *Italian*, though I could not ſpeak it myſelf.

About four Months after I had been at *Leghorn*, as I paſſed down to the Water-ſide, to ſee what *Engliſh* Shipping were there, having almoſt come to a Reſolution of returning to *Englang*, I ſaw a Ship under Sail, making for the Port; ſo I ſtood near an Hour to view it, then taking a Turn in the Town, I came down again to my former Station; and obſerving that the Veſſel was come into the Harbour, and was about mooring, and that the Ship's Boat was taking in ſomebody to be brought on Shore, my Curioſity prompted me to ſee who arrived in it, eſpecially as I conjectured, that I ſaw a Woman deſcend from the Ship.

The Boat was not long making the Shore, and preſented me with a very pretty young Lady, holding a little Boy in a Veſt in her Lap. This Proſpect drawing me nearer to the Stairs they came up at, how great was my Surprize to ſee *Biddy*; I could by no Means contain myſelf to aſk her Name, but clapping my Hands round her Neck, before ſhe had obſerved me; My dear *Biddy*, ſays I, is it you? Have we once more met? I had ſqueezed her ſo cloſe to me, that ſhe could form no View of my Face, and the poor Child at the ſame Time crying out, O my Mammy, my Mammy! The Father (who was but a few Paces behind, giving Orders to the

the Boat's Crew) ran forward to ſee what was the Matter: By this Time, having quitted my Hold, and *Biddy* recollecting me, ſure there never before happened a more tender Interview, the Beach being lined with People to ſee us.

Finding them unprovided with Lodgings on Shore, I took them Home to my own, where my Landlady, having ſome ſpare Rooms, I fixed them.

When they had ſettled their Accomodations, the Captain returned to the Ship, on his own Affairs; and we, rejoicing in the Company of each other, began to recount Sketches of ours; but reſerved the Particulars to another Opportunity, when we ſhould have more Laiſure; only *Biddy* gave me this Caution, that before her Huſband, I ſhould never mention her having been at *C—r—k*-Caſtle before I came; for, ſays ſhe, he knows we made our Eſcape together, but that I had been any Time Miſtreſs to the Laird of *C—r—k*, that, you may be ſure, I did not inform him of.

When we found Time for unravelling each others Tranſactions, *Biddy* told me, that ſhe, and the reſt of the Company upon the Rock, waited with the utmoſt Impatience for the Return of the Boat, for ſeveral Days, till they had loſt Sight of the Ship; but ſaid, that ſeeing nothing of her, they imagined we were all caſt away, which, ſays ſhe, encreaſes my Pleaſure

tenfold, at the Meeting of you alive again. She told me, that after remaining on the Rock near a Month, and feeding on the wild Herbs they found there, even the Stock of them grew very low, and that one would frequently puſh another into the Sea, if he had but the leaſt Proſpect of picking a few Leaves of them before him, which contributed very much to Animoſities between them: That at laſt, one of them, an elderly Man, dying, they agreed to eat him, and accordingly did ſo; when the Weather growing hot, they were forced to ſink the Remainder in the Baſon of Water, to keep it from Flies, and Putrefaction: But what is ſtill more dreadful, ſays ſhe, was, that when that Corps was gone, we beheld each other with evil Eyes, and no one thought himſelf ſafe, unleſs there was ſome Supply of Food provided; therefore, to prevent uſeleſs Murder, we propoſed to draw Cuts, which of us ſhould become Food for the reſt. The very Naming of ſuch a Thing would ſhock human Nature, one would think; but being ſenſible of the Neceſſity of it, it is ſurprizing how readily we all ſubmitted. We drew ourſelves into a Ring, and the eldeſt of us prepared the deciſive Cuts, when each having drawn, we with trembling Hearts produced them, and the Lot fell upon the youngeſt Man of the Company. I watched to ſee how he would exclaim at his Fortune; but

but inſtead of that, was amazed to obſerve, how readily he offered himſelf to the Knife, that being the only Inſtrument of Slaughter we then had. He ſhook us each by the Hand, and kiſſed us; then deſiring a Liberty to ſay his Prayers, he began very undauntedly. The Sight to me was ſo moving, that I propoſed (as we were to be his Executioners, and knew not whoſe Turn was to come next) that we might all join with him. This one and all came into very heartily; and ſurely it was the moſt affecting Sight that ever was beheld, while it laſted: But lo! the Unſteadineſs of Mankind, ever in one Extream, or the other; for we had not been long at our Devotions, but one of them ſtarting up, cryed, a Sail, a Sail; whereupon, we all (together with the Sacrifice) leaped up, and running, ſome here, ſome there; ſome of us fetched all the Wood we could collect readily, and made a vaſt Fire, others hallowing till they rent their Throats; then we got up to the higheſt Points of the Rock, holding up our Hats, and Cloaths, and waving them in the Air; but all this would have been of no Avail, but for the Hand of Providence; for the Morning which ſet in very fine, was now overcaſt, and though free from Vapours near the Earth, was very dull, by which Means our Fire became viſible to the Ship's Crew, which otherwiſe had been abſorbed by the Sun Beams; but ſo it was,

that we perceived the Ship began to make the Rock, which cheered us up beyond Meaſure, and I can't ſay, I was more joyful for my own Deliverance, than for the Eſcape of our poor young Victim.

The Captain of the Veſſel, ſay ſhe, my now Huſband, was ſo kind to take us all in, and uſe us with the utmoſt Humanity; he is a *Dane*, but had moſt of his Education in *England*; he was bound from *Copenhagen* to *Bengal*, ſo could not ſtay to land us, but as we grew able, and recovered our Strength, he entred us upon the Ship's Books, to receive Pay. I was entred amongſt the Reſt; but the hauling of Ropes, and climbing of Shrouds, was a Work that went very hard with me; this the Mate having ſeveral Times take Notice of, as often ſtrip'd me for it; but though I took no Notice of it by outward Complaint, he obſerving me frequently to weep by myſelf, went in to the Captain, and told him that the *Highlander*, (for I had only my Plaid ſtill to wear) was the idleſt Fellow that ever came on board a Ship, and that I ſhould eat ten Times more than I earned. The Captain ordered him to ſend me to him, and when I came, *James*, ſays he (for I went by the Name of *James Smith*) I hear an ill Report of you; my Mate tells me, he can make nothing of you, you won't mind your Duty; if you don't behave better, (which I think Gratitude ſhould oblige

oblige you to, conſidering the Condition I relieved you from) I ſhall turn you on Shore, on the firſt Land I ſee, inhabited or not; for I won't wrong my Owners, by making them pay for a uſeleſs Hand.

Dear *Patty*, ſays ſhe, every Word of the Captain's pierced my very Heart, being ſenſible that all he ſaid was too true; when falling on my Knees before him, and weeping bitterly, O Sir, ſays I, give me a favourable Hearing; I am not what you take me for, I am no Sailor, but a moſt unfortunate young Lady, who, to avoid the Brutality of a Man whoſe Hands I had fallen into, together with another young Creature, in the ſame Circumſtances with myſelf, and now at the Bottom of the Sea, eſcaped to the Rock you took me from, in a ſmall Boat; rather ſubmitting to the Guidance of Providence on the Water, than to the Luſt of a Villain at Land.

The Captain ſtood in a Maze, while I made my Relation: Young Man, or Woman, I know not which I am to call you, ſays he, let me ſee your Hand? Then looking upon it, I am ſatisfied you have not been uſed to the Sea, ſays he, come, cheer up, does no Body in the Ship know the Relation you have made me? I aſſured him, they did not; then, ſays he, to prevent my further Abuſe of you, I'll take you for my Servant, when no one will have any longer a Power over you.

I thanked him very ſubmiſſively, and told him I would ſerve him to the beſt of my Power in any lawful Command.

I had now entered upon a new Scene, and was all Diligence in my Calling; and indeed, any one might have done what I was put upon; for the hardeſt Duty was, only to perform ſuch little Offices as kept me moſt in his Sight. I from the Moment he had appropriated me to himſelf, took all poſſible Care to keep myſelf exactly neat, and as amiable as I could before him, which he obſerving, took every Opportunity of enquiring after my Family and Education, and finding that to his liking, and perceiving by my Behaviour, when I was a little more familiar with him, that I ſhould be no Diſgrace to him, either by my Perſon, Speech, or Accompliſhments, if I was his Wife; he told me one Morning, as I was ſetting his Things for Breakfaſt, that he did not like to ſee me any longer in that ſhabby Plaid; but as we were near touching at the *Cape of Good-hope*, he would procure me a Woman's Dreſs from ſome of the *Dutch* Frows, and that I ſhould thence forward only wear that. I told him, if he could then as well retain me in his Service as in Man's Apparel, I ſhould like it infinitely better.

This paſſed on till we came to the Cape, when taking me on Shore with him, he made me change my Habit, and when I had ſo done,

and

and the Woman who had brought my Female Dreſs was gone out of the Room, he came to me, and ſeeming as if he would view me round more narrowly, claſped me in his Arms; now my dear, ſays he, I may ſay I am in Poſſeſſion of the brighteſt Angel in the World; he preſſed me ſo cloſe, and held me ſo long, looking me full in the Face, that I bluſhed as red as Scarlet; then quitting me, I had only a Mind to ſee, whether you were a Maiden, or not, ſays he, and now I am ſatisfied; but *Biddy*, ſays he, (for I had told him my Name was *Bridget*) I have one Queſtion to aſk you more, and that is, if you left any Sweetheart behind you in *England*, for I can't reliſh a divided Heart. I aſſured him I had not, and that as I was taken from a Boarding School, it was moſt unlikely I ſhould have any. Then, ſays he, be ingenuous, there is no Occaſion for Virgin Shineſs here; I am free hearted, and as I act upon reaſonable Principles, with a ſtrict Senſe of Honour, can you like me for a Huſband?—Declare it without Reſerve; for if you cannot, and would not deſire me, was it at your free Option, and that you was ignorant of my Sentiments, I am not ſo blinded by my Paſſion, as to require it of you; but if you can ſincerely love me, and like me, you are the firſt, and only Woman upon Earth I will marry.

What could I oppoſe to ſo much Sincerity and Goodneſs? I might have gone round-about, and have given him and myſelf great Pain and Uneaſineſs; but as I really thought him the moſt amiable Man I had ever beheld (and now you may in ſome Meaſure judge how true I ſpeak, though you ſee him not with my Eyes) I plainly told him, that I was ſure he had obſerved from my Behaviour, ever ſince I had the Pleaſure to be near his Perſon, that I had ſerved him, with a Regard beyond that of the faithfulleſt meer Servant; and that as I did not doubt the Sincerity of his Declaration to me, ſince he was pleaſe to require the Truth from me, I aſſured him, that if the Male World were preſented me for my Choice, himſelf ſhould have the Preference. Then *Biddy*, ſays he, there is an End of Courtſhip, and you know what comes next.

He then kiſſed me, and told me he would leave me a little Space, and be back time enough to be on Board at Night; he did not ſtay long, and as I gueſſed what he went for, ſo it happened; for he brought with him a *Dutch* Parſon, who directly marrying us, we went on Board; but ſure ſuch ſtaring there was at me, to ſee me turned Lady, and ſuch crowding about me, that the Captain was obliged to call them to Order; and taking me upon the Quarter Deck, he told them ſome Part of my Hiſtory, in Miniature,

ature, and that he had married me: Upon this, there enſued ſuch a Shout, as almoſt rent the Air, for he is vaſtly beloved by all his Crew. They inſiſted on firing all the Guns, and uſed every other poſſible Demonſtration of Satisfaction; but, when the Captain ordered them a Quarter Caſk of Brandy to be made into Punch, you would have thought they would have fired the Ship for Joy; all, ſave the Mate, who, very ſubmiſſively begged my Pardon publickly, before the whole Crew, for the Abuſes of his Power over me, and ſeemed highly dejected; but I aſſuring him, I heartily forgave him, and that I was ſenſible his Behaviour to me, was no more than what his Duty required, and inſiſting that he ſhould ſup with the Captain and me, in Token that I bore no Reſentment to him; he alſo cheered up again, and became excellent Company for the Remainder of the Night.

The next Day, we had almoſt all the *Dutch* Factory and their Wives on Board to viſit us, which we in a Day or two returned to them; ſo that there was nothing for one whole Week, but Feſtivity and Rejoicing.

I then proceeded with my Huſband to *Bengal*, and from thence to *Copenhagen*, where our Stay being but ſhort, and being delivered of this Boy, I came on Board again with him; for I had now been ſo long uſed to the Sea, that having my Huſband with me, I made that my

Choice, preferable to the Land, and have accompanied him ever ſince.——And now, ſays ſhe, what do you really think of Captain *Powell?* (for that was my Huſband's Name) I told her I thought him a very perſonable Man, and very ſober and humane. She replied I had given him a very juſt Character, for wherever they went, he was careſſed and beloved; and of herſelf, there could not be found a more indulgent Creature.

I enquiring when they returned to *Denmark*, ſhe replied, that they only juſt touched in here, for that his Cargoe was conſigned to *Venice*, and ſhe expected to ſtay but few Days at *Leghorn*. I told her, I was reſolved to go with her, for I would not part from her again, till ſhe returned to *Denmark*, when I would viſit *England* once more; and from thenceforth, we highly pleaſed ourſelves with the Proſpect of each others Company.

I let her into the Knowledge of all that had befallen me, ſince I left the Rock, and whenever we compared Notes, and ſeriouſly reflected on the miraculous Hand of Providence in our Preſervations, ſo contrary to all human Appearance, our Eyes would flow with Tears of Gratitude to our Almighty Deliverer; for though the Preſſures of Affliction ſit but heavily on the beſt of Creatures, during their Continuance; yet they who have never ſuffered, are incapable of

of judging, what Delight to one's ſelf, and Affection to Providence, reſults from a Conviction of ſupernatural Aſſiſtance.

CHAP. XV.

Captain Powell *leaves* Biddy *at* Leghorn *with the Author till his Return from Venice. Meet Don* Henriques *at an Aſſembly. The Author's Surprize, and Reſolution to avoid him.* Biddy *obliges her to ſee him. Their Meeting. Invite him to Dinner next Day. Diſcourſe on Don* Henriques. *The moving Scene of their Meeting alone. Aſſures her of his Affection. He informs her what had happened, and his Travels in Search of her. Preſſes her to marry him. She refuſes. Shews her his Father's and Mother's Conſent. Are overcome with Joy. Are married.*

WHEN the Time of the Captain's Departure came, though we had both made Preparations to accompany him, yet a ſingle Word of his, ſoon put a Stop to our Intentions; for *Biddy* being then big with Child, he told us, he thought ſhe had better continue with me at *Leghorn*, than go with him to *Venice*; for as his Stay there, would depend upon the Speed of his Freighter's Diſpatch, he choſe that his Wife

Wife ſhould lie in at *Leghorn*, where he was ſatisfied he ſhould leave her in ſafe Hands, with me; ſo our Voyage being poſtponed, the Captain took his Leave of us, and ſet Sail.

We lived together very agreeably for ſeveral Weeks, and I introduced her to all the Acquaintance I had formed there, and we often frequented the Aſſemblies, and were very much reſpected; but one Night, being dreſſed in our beſt, and going to an Aſſembly at the *French* Conſuls; what could equal my Surprize, at the Sight of Don *Henriques*, ſitting very melancholy, in one Corner of the Room! He had not ſeen me as yet, and therefore I turned from him, and ſtepping up to *Biddy*; O my dear *Biddy*, ſays I, yonder is Don *Henriques*, whom you have heard me ſo often mention; I am frighted to Death, what can have brought him hither?

My dear, ſays *Biddy*, you have done nothing to be aſhamed of, why ſhould you avoid his Sight? It may undoubtly be ſome Satisfaction to you, to enquire after the Family; I would put myſelf in his Way; ſhe ſeeing me deline it, expoſed my Folly to me, telling me, it could be no Harm to be known to him. O *Biddy*, ſays I, you did not hear all, when I told you my Story; I did not let you know that I loved him. Nay, ſays ſhe, if that is the Caſe, as he loved you too, you have the beſt Opportunity in the World now, to make as ſhort a Courtſhip as the Captain

Captain and I did. Alas? ſays I, my long Abſence may have driven me from his Thoughts; or he may be already married; or perhaps look coldly upon me, which I can't bear, and ſhall but make myſelf wretched for ever by it.

She taking me by the Hand, come, *Patty*, ſays ſhe, you ſhall follow me and ſhew yourſelf I am reſolved. Nay, ſays ſhe, (perceiving me to draw back) it is to no Purpoſe to oppoſe me, for if you will not boldly paſs by him, I am reſolved to go myſelf, and tell him you are here.

I thought I could have killed her for being ſo poſſitive; but ſhe ſtill perſiſting in it, I was prevailed upon to walk by him, with Fear and Trembling. Though he ſat looking down in a muſing Poſture, he got a Glimpſe of me, and immediately, (for I eyed him by a ſide Glance) his Countenance changing, he ſtarted up, run after me, and turning his Head to View me; O my Soul, ſays he, am I not deceived? Is it you *Patty?* Is it you? He ſeemed to be in ſuch Raptures, that I feared he would have been tranſported to ſome Indecency, before ſo much Company; ſo I ſpoke very freely to him, and enquiring after the Healths of his Father, my Lady, and his Siſters, he told me, in few Words, they were all well; but his Impatience would not permit him to ſpend thoſe Words on them, which he hoped might turn out to far better Account for himſelf.

He

He had begun to tell me, how my leaving the *Brazils* had diſtreſſed him; and was proceeding, when I ſtopped him, by deſiring to know if his Stay at *Leghorn* was to be of any Continuance? He replied, that was wholly in my Power only to determine; for to whatever Part of the Earth I went, I ſhould ever find him there. This kind and loving Teſtimony of his Affection, made me deſire him to compoſe himſelf, during the Aſſembly; and *Biddy* interpoſing, told him, I ſhould be glad to ſee him the next Day, at my Lodging; at the ſame Time informing him where it was.

This Notice revived him, ſo that, in Compliance with my Deſires, he forbore any farther particular Application to me, and we paſſed the Remainder of the Evening very agreeably; but my Heart ſtill ſtruggled with various Conflicts.

When the Aſſembly broke up, Don *Henriques* waited on us Home, graſping my Hand in his own all the Way, and taking Leave at the Door, promiſed to Dine with us next Day, upon *Biddy's* Invitation.

When we came in, ſays *Biddy*, I am charmed with the Sweetneſs of Don *Henriques*'s Converſation, and aſſure you, it is well for you that I am a married Woman, or you would certainly have a Rival in me; you ſhould never have carried off that accompliſhed Gentleman, without my trial of Skill to have ſupplanted you. Dear Child,

Child, ſays I, you feel not the Tumult my Breaſt is filled with; do you think that I ſhall carry him off, as you call it? No, believe me, this is but a Revivor of my almoſt ſtifled Paſſion, and though his Intentions may be ſincere to make me his Wife, can I comply, to make the Man I adore Miſerable? as he muſt be with me, againſt the Conſent of his Father. No, the Don is too ſtiff to condeſcend to that; I ſhould as ſoon expect to ſee all the Ships in the Harbour come ſailing by our Door upon dry Land, as to ſee that Day: Then, inſtead of ſeeming to rejoice, you ſhould pity me, who, in Contradiction to every Sentiment of my Soul, muſt repulſe that Love of Don *Henriques*, which I ſo much eſteem, leſt I ſhould reduce him to the Neceſſity of deſpiſing me hereafter, as the Author of thoſe future Calamities, he muſt unavoidable fall under with me. No, no, *Biddy*, I view this our Meeting in a far different Light to what you do, and with the moſt ſhocking Proſpect receive all the Tokens of his Affection for me; and but for the Invitation you gave him for To-morrow, I would have fled the Town, e're I would have exchanged another Look with him.

I had by this Time wrought up my Paſſions to ſuch a pitch of Horror at what I expected would ſucceed, that my Eyes alone could give them a Vent. *Biddy* ſeeing me ſo uneaſy, made uſe

uſe of every Argument, and ſaid all the good-natured and encouraging Things ſhe could deviſe, to quiet me; for though ſhe admitted a Poſſibility, that ſome Part of what I had repeated might prove real; yet ſhe ſaid, there were many Probabilities to the contrary; and that we ought not to view every Thing in the worſt Light: She was ſatisfied there was a ſufficient Fund of Love on both Sides, and that would make us happy.

While it laſts, ſays I; but don't you know, we and our Children muſt be cloathed, and eat, as well as Love? Will that fill our Bellies? Can Don *Henriques*, when the Edge of his Paſſion is abated; he, I ſay, that has been delicately educated, and has lived in Expectation of a ſuperior Rank in Life, look on me hereafter with the leaſt Tenderneſs, when he can't but view in me, the Cauſe and Foundation of his Diſtreſs; And then, though I ſhould become his Wife, ſuppoſe his Father obliges him to deſert me; where is my Remedy? I am thrown out, abandoned, deprived of a farther Settlement in Life; and all, becauſe I had not Reſolution ſufficient to withſtand both Don *Henriques*'s Ruin and my own. In this Manner, I raved till Bed-time, and then could not ſleep a Wink; I would fain have had *Biddy* make ſome Excuſe for my not appearing when he came; but ſhe would not be contradicted; I muſt, and

ſhould

ſhould ſee him, ſhe ſaid, hear what he had to offer, and then act as I pleaſed.

We did not expect he would have come till about the Hour of Dining, but preſently heard him below, almoſt two Hours before. I would have had *Biddy* gone down with me to him; but ſhe ſaid, there might be Affairs to diſcourſe of at our firſt Meeting, that might require Privacy, and inſiſted upon my going alone.

My Reader muſt pauſe a little here, and not expect I ſhould be able to ſet forth in Words, what the Heart itſelf is ſcarce able to conceive; I mean, the Emotions of our Minds at this our private Interview: Broken Words, ſtolen Looks, Sighs, Trembling, Joy, Confuſion, Love, Terror, and every Turn the human Faculties are capable of, being blended together, and exerting their ſeveral Forces for the upper Hand, exhibited to each a Picture of the other's Soul. We ſtopped a little, we gazed a little, we ſtopped again, and gazed again. Madam,—Sir,—approached a Step, bowed, wiſhed for each other to begin; but neither knew what to ſay: till, no ſooner had I told him he was welcome to *Leghorn*, but the Sluices of his Utterance flew open, and the Torrent of his Profeſſions to me, rolled faſter than Words could be adapted to hem.

He firſt aſſured me of his Conſtancy and Affection for me, and of the Miſery he ſuſtained

on

on the first News of my Departure. He said, he then grew so bad, that the Physicians had given him over. That his Mother had yielded to his Passion, and had used every Motive with his Father for that Purpose; assuring him, that if he complied not, he would certainly lose him. My Mother, says he, would not let me know the worst; but still flattered me with Hopes of my Father's Compliance, and promised me a Message should be sent after you to *England*, to engage you to return; and if not, that I should have Leave to follow you, so soon as I was better; this I found she did, in Hopes of recovering me again; and indeed, I mended upon the Prospect; but when the Vessel that carried you out was returned with the News of that Ship being taken by the Rovers, on Board of which you was gone for *England*, it no sooner came to my Ears, than I was going to destoy myself, and declared solemnly to my Mother, that if my Father would not fit me out a Vessel, with a sufficient Supply to redeem you, I would put an End to a most miserable Being with my own Hands; for that my Torments were past Sufferance. My Father upon this, coming to visit me, expostulated, persuaded, threatened, smoothed, and promised me every Thing he could imagine would quiet me; but being then come to a Resolution, I told him, I neither could or would live without you; and as for Life, it was now become

become ſo burthenſome, that I had no Pleaſure in any Reflection, but that of recovering you, or deſtroying it; and when he left me, I begged him to forgive me any Thing I might be guilty of to diſpleaſe him, but that he would never ſee me more.

This Speech ſtung him to the Heart; when returning, *Henriques*, ſays he, ſince it muſt ſo, and cannot be avoided, get your Health but eſtabliſhed, and you ſhall be gratified; I will provide you with all Neceſſaries, and commit you to Providence, and the Seas. I returned him every Token of my Gratitude, for his affectionate Kindneſs to me, and from that Day, date the Reſtoration of my Health; and in about two Months, I ſet Sail for the *Mediterranean*. I inquired after the Rover, from every Veſſel we ſaw; but could hear nothing of it, by the Deſcription I gave; till almoſt deſparing of Succeſs, as we were making to *Algiers*, we were informed by a Veſſel coming from the *Levant*, that about the Time I mentioned, but ſomewhat later, (as they thought) ſuch a Barbary Rover was taken, and carried into *Leghorn*, by an *Engliſh* Man of War. This gave me Hope again, and I proceeded hither, where, having found thee, *Patty*, I hope to be the happieſt Man in the World; for ſure, no Alteration hath happened to you, in my Abſence.

Alteration,

Alteration, Sir, ſays I, as how pray? I mean ſays he, that you are not married, or have changed your good Opinion of me, which my Mother aſſures me you once had? I ſatisfied him I was yet ſingle, but as to my good Opinion of him, I was ſilent, till he urged me again, and again, for a Reply; declaring, that his Torment was inexpreſſible, till he was aſcertained, whether he had a reaſonable Ground to hope for my Affection.

Sir, replied I, when you was at firſt pleaſed to look ſo much beneath your own Quality, as to regard me; I avoided your Addreſſes, from the ſame Motive only, that I ſtill muſt; Name it, ſays he. Sir, ſaid I, the Want of your Father's Conſent, and without that, I can never contribute to your Unhappineſs. I have it, ſays he. But, replied I, how can I be aſſured, that your profeſſed Paſſion don't bias you, for my Peace ſake only, to inform me ſo? O! my Life, ſays he, judging that to be the only Bar to my Felicity before, I would not quit the *Brazils* till I had it, under his own Hand, for your Satisfaction; then pulling it out of his Pocket, together with a Letter from his Mother to me, he gave me the Letter firſt; which in the moſt ſweet and obliging Terms, adminiſtred a true Cordial to my confuſed Mind; for ſhe told me, juſt what I had heard from Don *Henriques*, that her Huſband had ſent me a Certificate of his Conſent

ſent to our Marriage, and begged me, upon her Bleſſing, not to delay it. My Eyes overflowed ſo at reading the Letter, that it was ſome Time before I could peruſe the Certificate; and deſired Don *Henriques* to read it to me; but looking up at him, I ſoon perceived him altogether as unable as myſelf; ſo that without a Word ſpeaking on either Side, we wept near Half an Hour, and had done ſo much longer I believe, (my Heart being exceedingly wrought upon, and mollified, by the tender Expreſſions of my good Lady) if *Biddy*, (not ſuſpecting what we were at,) had not come ſuddenly into the Room; when obſerving how we were engaged, ſhe was retiring; but I called her back, and putting the Letter into her Hand, (for it was wrote in *Engliſh*) deſired her to read; ſhe had ſcarce read it Half through, before ſhe, ſympathiſing with our Joys, became as mute as we were; at length, ſhe cheered up, and comforted us both; when collecting from her Voice, that ſhe had recovered, for my Eyes were too full of Water yet, to ſee ſhe was compoſed again; I took the Certificate from Don *Henriques*, and putting it into her Hand, begged the Favour that ſhe would read it; but that being in *Portugueſe* ſhe returned it again, which contained the following Words, as near as the Tranſlation will bear.

To

To Mrs. *Martha Saunders.*

" Be aſſured, whenever you ſhall ſee this " Writing, ſubſcribed with my Name, and " Hand; that I Don *Cortez de Paboia* have gi- " ven my full and free Conſent, that my Son " Don *Henriques de Paboia* ſhall make you his " lawful Wife, as the laſt Mark of my ſincere " Eſteem for you; in Hopes your Affections will " never decreaſe, or diminiſh, from their firſt " Vigour. Signed at the *Brazils.*"

Cortez de Paboia.

This threw us again back to our former Reverie, till *Biddy* began to laugh at us, and joke us out of the Dumps, as ſhe called it.

Don *Henriques*, who had firſt recovered the Uſe of Speech, told her, ſhe muſt not be ſurprized that two ſuch dear Friends ſhould weep at Meeting, after ſo tedious a Separation; which ſhe agreed to be reaſonable enough, but beſought us to become more chearful, now our firſt Tranſports were over; and by her good Words, and agreeable Behaviour, ſhe ſoon brought us to a converſable State again.

I having now nothing to ſay againſt making Don *Henriques* as happy as he wiſhed; his Impatience would not even wait till our next Meeting, for my Promiſe to marry him, but obliged me to engage for the next Morning.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

Preſſes the Author to depart with him for Brazils. *She defers it till Captain* Powell's *Return. Make a Tour to* Florence. *View the Grand Duke's Curioſities. A Stranger begs a Sight of her Ring. Changes it. She is ſurprized. Diſcovers Lord* H——t, *her Father. Appoints him to ſee her in the Afternoon. Returns uneaſy. Stratagem to ſee her Father alone. His Diſcourſe, and Joy to meet her. Tells him the Story of her Life. Appoint to meet as for the firſt Time in the Grand Duke's Gallery next Day. Their Meeting there. She preſents her Husband to him. Return to* Leghorn. *Lord* H——t *makes them a Preſent, and leaves them. What it contains. The Author's Hopes thereupon.*

WHEN our Nuptials were over, he told me, that a Veſſel waited for him in the Port, and adviſed me to prepare for my Departure to his Father's. This I could now willingly have undertaken at any Time, but for *Biddy*; I told him her Situation there, and that it was merely on my Account ſhe had been left behind, when her Huſband went to *Venice*; ſo that I could have no Pretence to quit her, till his Return. He agreed, that this was ſo reaſonable,

it

it muſt be complied with, and told me, that having a large Sum of Money, which he had brought out with him, for my Ranſom, in caſe I had been in Captivity, he would not carry it back again in Specie, but employ himſelf, during his Stay, in laying it out in ſuch Things as might be moſt uſeful at his Return.

Don *Henriques* amuſed himſelf this Way, for about three Weeks more, till he had diſpoſed of as much of his Caſh as he thought proper; then, having nothing to do, and thinking the Time long till the Captain's Arrival, we propoſed a Tour to *Florence*, to ſee the Grand Duke's Curioſities: We ſpent the Day after we arrived, in meer Sauntering about the City, and the third Day went to the Palace, to view the Rarities in the Grand Duke's Gallery, where were alſo ſeveral Strangers on the ſame Account. We did not keep cloſe together, but were ſome looking at one Thing, and ſome at another. I was then ſtanding between a Gentleman very richly dreſſed on my left Hand, and a Lady on my right. We were admiring a Landſkip, with ſeveral Figures in it, one of which, I took Notice, ſeemed to ſtand at a prodigious Diſtance, and was ſo ſmall, as ſcarce to be diſcerned by the naked Eye; but yet ſo perfect, when you looked attentively at it, that it was amazing. The Gentleman was pointing to ſomething, which he thought very excellent, and directing with his

his Finger our Eyes that Way; when we all had taken ſufficient Notice of that, I pointed with my left Hand, to the minute Figure I had ſo much admired, that they alſo might obſerve it, and ſtill kept my Finger at it, for fear it ſhould eſcape them: But while I was very buſy in telling them my Sentiments of it, the Gentleman, who had before taken no particular Notice of me, turned his Head directly to my Face, and looking earneſtly at me, andthen at my Hand (which I had by this Time withdrawn from the Landſkip) may I beg, once more, to ſee that Ring of your's, Madam, ſays he, it ſeems to be a mighty pretty one. Thinking ſo trifling a Requeſt might very innocently be granted him, I took it off, and gave it him; he moving at the ſame Time, a Step or two from me, as if he wanted more Light, I obſerved him to look at my Ring, and then at his own Finger, then on that again, and ſo alternately, for ſeveral Times together; he then turning, fronted me, and ſeemed very uneaſy at ſomething, and looking at me, he very genteelly preſented me my Ring again, hoping I would not be offended at the Liberty he had taken.

I walked about ſome Time, playing with my Ring, between my Finger and Thumb; but going afterwards to put it upon the ſame Finger I uſed to wear it upon, which was my middle one, it being too big for either of the other, I

was ſurprized, to find it was ſo far from coming on that Finger, that it would but with Difficulty ſlip over the Joint of the next. I began to think I had miſtaken, and was uſed to wear it on that Finger, till recollecting myſelf, I was very certain I always wore it on the middle Finger. I then looked at the Ring, to diſcover whether it had been changed by any Accident; but was ſtill perſuaded it muſt be my own. At laſt I walked up to Don *Henriques*, and *Biddy*, who then happening to be together, I began to rehearſe the Oddity of the Affair to them, and they looked at the Ring, and tried it, till I own it gave me peculiar Concern, to think what could be the Meaning of it.

All the while this was tranſacting between us (as I heard afterwads) the ſame Gentleman had been Spectator of my Surprize, which having pretty well overcome, and taking ſtill a further View of the remarkable Beauties of the Place, the Gentleman, to whom I had ſhewn my Ring, came up to me, and begging Pardon for his Miſtake, told me, he had, he believed, exchanged Rings with me. I was ſo amazed, to think he had another ſo like my own (when he ſhewed me mine) that I began to imagine it was ſome Deceit he was putting upon me, in order to get my right Stone, for a falſe one; but offering me mine again, and ſaying, Miſs *Patty*, pray let me put it on for you, I was ſtill more

more confounded; pray Sir, ſays I, how long have you known me? Before you knew yourſelf, my Dear, ſays he; but I am overwhelmed with Joy at meeting you, and can ſay no more here, than that I am your Father. This, I own, threw me into ſuch a Surprize, between Joy and Trembling, that I became unable to reply more, than, O my dear Father! I have a Letter for you, which my Mother gave me with this Ring. He would have ſaid more, but the Place being too publick, he deſired to know where I was to be found in the City, and he would take an Opportunity after Dinner of ſeeing me, for he was obliged to leave *Florence* the next Day; ſo I told him where we lodged, and he left me.

My Heart fluttered, and trembled ſo at this new Adventure, that I longed to get out of the Gallery to my Lodging, that I might indulge myſelf in Thought and Reflection, and conſider with myſelf, in what Manner to receive my Father; for as I knew him only, by what he had ſaid to me, if he ſhould enquire for me, and Don *Henriques* ſhould ſuſpect my Conſtancy to him, upon ſeeing the Greeting that muſt be the Conſequence of a Father and Child's Meeting, after about eight Years Abſence, what would become of me? So pretending to be a little out of Order, I mentioned leaving the Gallery. *Biddy* ſaid, we had a Week's Work

to go through yet; and Don *Henriques* was ſo delighted with all he ſaw, that he thought he ſhould never have enough of it; but ſtill, both obſerving me to be uneaſy, they returned with me.

I wanted to make *Biddy* the Confident of my Adventure, but never having acquainted her of my accidental Birth, I knew not how to reveal to her a Concern for the Sight of my Father, that, I thought, would not have a good Look at all; but ſomething muſt be done, that I might ſee him before Don *Henriques* did. I laboured my Mind all Dinner-time, and forced myſelf upon a mighty Liking to the Gallery, they both ſaying, they could have tarried there ever ſo long, and not have been tired. I then propoſed to them to return again, ſo ſoon as we had dined. This they readily agreed to, which was what I wanted them to do: No ſooner was Dinner over, and we had repoſed a little, but they were ready to be gone: I made, as if I was as forward as they for it; but, during our Preparation, pretended to be out of Order again, as I was in the Morning, and that I would lie down upon the Bed; upon which they both declared they would not leave me, but go again another Day; till I inſiſting, that (as they could be of no Service to me, who ſhould only take a Nap, and be very well again) I would have them go, and divert me with the

Particulars

Particulars at Night; ſo they both took Leave of me, and went.

I now waited with great Impatience the Arrival of my Father, but reſolved not to be too credulous, as to what he ſaid, for I remembred not the leaſt of his Countenance, which gave me great Concern. At laſt he came, and being ſhewed in to me: Are you alone, my dear *Patty*, ſays he? I told him, I was. O Child, ſays he, how bleſt is thy Father, in now beholding thee, whom I never expected to hear of more? He then ſhewed me his Ring; here, ſays he, let me ſee your's, theſe two Rings, when firſt I loved thy Mother, were one long Diamond, and given to me by a noble Lady, my Godmother. I loved thy Mother, Child, ſays he, better than my Life. I told him, ſhe had repeated their whole Amour to me, and had, on her Death-bed, given me this Letter, (I then ſhewed it him)) to aſcertain him, if ever we ſhould meet, that I was his own Child. Ah! ſays he, that good Woman has ſaved me an infinite Confuſion, in revealing the Circumſtances of our Loves to you; but as to theſe Rings, I tell you, they were one, till your Mother was obliged to quit our Family, with Child of you; when, being too long a Stone, I had it ſawn in the Middle, and ſet in two, with both our Hairs intermixed under each Stone; you may obſerve, my dear, ſays he, one flat End to each

of them, where they were ſeparated. I was hurried out of *England* to travel, ſays he, about eight Years ago, with my elder Brother, who was thought to be conſumptive, where I ſtayed three Years, and had no Confident, that I could truſt to viſit you in my Abſence. Within three Days after my Return, I rode to *Luton*, hoping to find you and your Mother both well; when, to my utmoſt Concern, I heard that ſhe was dead, and you had ſoon after been carried off by Robbers. This I thought would have broken my Heart; ſo upon my Return, not being able to bear Home, I have ever ſince been travelling, one where or other, to divert my Melancholy, and I have for ſome Months been on Board the Fleet, now in the *Mediterranean*: But my dear, ſays he, pray let me know, what has brought you to this Part of the World? After making an Apology for the Tediouſneſs of a Narration I was about entring upon, I began and unfolded to him every minute Circumſtance of my Affairs, till I came to *Leghorn*, and alſo my Marriage a few Days before; with all which he was greatly delighted, as the Conſequence had turned out ſo happily for me, he ſaid; and I believe he ſpoke without Flattery, for, during my Relation of every Paſſage of my Life, each lucky or unfortunate Occurrence might be read, either in the Concern or Joy of his Countenance.

I was heartily glad I had ſo aptly diſpoſed of my Husband, and *Biddy*, for my Father ſitting cloſe by me, the whole Time of our Diſcourſe, did ſo tenderly embrace me, that it would have been more than ſufficient to have made Don *Henriques* ſuſpicious of me, had he been Eye-Witneſs of it.

He longed, he ſaid, to ſee my Husband, for he ſhould love him, for his Tenderneſs to me. I knew not how to bring it about, without diſcovering more, poſſibly, than it might be proper for Don *Henriques* to know; ſo I told my Father, that upon my Mother's Credit, I had informed my Husband, that my Father was of the *Engliſh* Nobility; but begged him not to drop in his Diſcourſe, any Hint of who my Mother was, or any Thing of my Birth; becauſe I told him, the *Portugueſe* were ſo lofty, that it might make him deſpiſe me; and, ſays I, Sir, that it may not be known that you have ſeen me before, I beg we may meet again in the Gallery To-morrow, and that you would then publickly own me for your Daughter, as met with there by Chance.

It ſhall be ſo, ſays he, and I very much approve your Method of divulging it; but I am afraid I ſhall loſe my Ship, for it is to ſail the next Morning from *Leghorn*; but it matters not, ſays he, if I never ſail again, now I have found you; for to tell you the Truth, your

Mother, whoſe Image you are, dwells ſo on my Mind, and ever will, that I can entertain no Thoughts of Marriage; ſo that the Title of our Family muſt be extinct; for the Duke, my elder, and the only Brother I have left, having no Iſſue, and being at Death's Door with a Conſumption, I expect an Account of his End every Moment, and then the Eſtate and Title falls to me; ſo prepare your Husband, ſays he, for the Voyage, for you ſhall both go with me to *England*, by the Return of the Fleet,

I told him, I hoped he would excuſe us, for that a Veſſel waited at *Leghorn*, to carry us to *Brazil*, and I feared my Husband could not conſent to go to *England*, before we had viſited his own Parents. Having agreed to meet in the Duke's Gallery next Morning, my Father took his Leave for that Night.

The next Morning, we went again to the Gallery, which is certainly the moſt curious Place, to an inquiſitive Mind, in the known World. We had not been long there, before I ſaw my Father come in at the further End; then taking *Biddy* under the Arm, come my dear, ſays I, let us walk a little: We met my Father, who ſtopping ſhort, (for he had dreſſed himſelf otherwiſe than the Day before) juſt before me: My Daughter, ſays he! or I am much miſtaken!—It muſt be ſo.—My dear Child, how came you into this Part of the World?

O my Father, ſays I, is it you? Then embracing each other, we ſeemed as if never to part again: *Biddy* was quite ſurprized; Don *Henriques* run to us; and all the Company collected round us.— My deareſt Child, ſays my Father, what happy Star led me to this Place, to preſent thee to me, after ſo many Years Abſence? I ſeeing Don *Henriques* look oddly, took him by the Hand, and preſented him to my Father, as my Huſband; they having complimented ſome Time, I preſented *Biddy* as my beſt Friend; my Father ſaluted her too; and taking me by the Hand, we ſeemed all ſo amazed, and delighted, that we ſcarce knew what we ſaid or did. We deſired my Father to dine with us, which he did, and telling us, he was afraid he detained the King's Ship at *Leghorn*, which waited for him, having ſtayed a Day longer than he intended, we all agreed to return with him thither.

My Spouſe and *Biddy* were greatly delighted with the fine Mein and eaſy Behaviour of my Father, who was certainly one of the handſomeſt, and beſt bred Gentlemen of the Age. We arrived all ſafe at *Leghorn* the next Day; when my Father left us, to enquire after the Ship, and promiſed to be with us at Supper: We were mighty cheerful, *Biddy* and I recounting broken Parts of our Story, by Turns, as Queſtions relating to us were ſtarted. When

Supper was over, my Father drank all Health to his Son and Daughter, and we in Return drank his; which being done, Son, ſays my Father, I am ſorry you ſhould meet with me for the firſt Time, unprovided of a competent Fortune for my Daughter; for you ſee I am but a Stranger here, as well as you; but if you will both go ſettle with me in *England*, you ſhall be Maſter of as fine a Seat, and Eſtate, as moſt are in the Kingdom of *Great-Britain*. Don *Henriques* begged to be excuſed, for that his Duty obliged him to viſit his Parents, who had, at his Requeſt, indulged his Humour ſo far, as to ſend him purpoſely to find his beloved Spouſe; and they would be inconſolable for his Abſence, if he did not make the beſt of his Way back again. Well, ſays my Father, if that is your Reſolution, I ſhall go to the Fleet early To-morrow Morning; but if you can change it, I will poſtpone that, and proceed with you by the firſt Conveyance we can procure. We both begged to be excuſed, and my Father embracing us, made us promiſe, the firſt Opportunity, to viſit him, which we did, and then, putting a ſealed Letter into Don *Henriques*'s Hand, he embraced us, wiſhed us a good Voyage, and took his Leave.

Seeing my Father preſent my Spouſe with a Letter, as I thought, and that, when it was too late to hear any Anſwer of our's to it, I began to

to miſtruſt ſome Miſchief would ariſe from it, and was exceſſive uneaſy, till Don *Henriques* opening it, told me, there was a Draught upon a Banker at *Leghorn*, for ten thouſand Dollars: This, ſays I, is a very generous Act indeed, I wonder he would not mention it: Says my Spouſe, here is ſomewhat further, I think a Letter; but it being in *Engliſh*, you can read it better than I, ſo giving it to me, it contained as follows.

Deareſt Son and Daughter,

" MY Uneaſineſs was very great, upon " the firſt News of your Marriage, to " think I was unprovided of any Preſent wor- " thy your Acceptance; but calling when I " left you, this Evening, at the Poſt-houſe, I re- " ceived this Remittance, which I have endorſed " for your Receipt. I hope you will eſteem it " as a ſmall Mark of my Affection for you " both, and would have given it you unin- " cloſed, but was aſhamed myſelf to name to " you ſo unworthy a Donation. If Fortune " permits us to meet in *England*, this ſhall be " but as a ſmall Mark of my Eſteem for my " moſt deſerving Children."

Your loving Father.

Don *Henriques* was the firſt that extolled the Nobleneſs of my Father's Mind; but was afraid,

fraid, as he was ſo far from Home, he might by this Act of Generoſity have ſtreightned himſelf: I was very glad to find him of that Way of Thinking, becauſe it heightened his Opinion of my Father; and, thinks I, now I am known to be of ſo good a Family, and am ſomewhat of a Fortune, I ſhall not fail to meet greater Reſpect from my old Maſter and Lady; for I could not frame my Tongue to call them Father and Mother yet.

CHAP. XVII.

Hear of Captain Powell's *Death, and Loſs of his Ship. Conceal the News.* Biddy *hears it. Falls in Labour. Recovers.* Don Henriques *and the Author depart for the* Brazils, *and take Mrs.* Powell *and her Son with them.*

DON *Henriques* and I thought the Time very long till we were ſailing, and we waited now for nothing, but the Return of Captain *Powell*. *Biddy* too, ſeemed very uneaſy at his Stay; but whilſt we were perplexing ourſelves about it, we received News, that the *Johanna* (for that was the Name of the Ship) was

was loſt in a Storm, coming out of the Gulph of *Venice*, and that all the Crew periſhed.

Don *Henriques* was the firſt of us who heard it at the Coffee-houſe, and coming Home in great Concern, told me of it, but how to keep it from the Knowledge of his Wife, we could not tell, neither of what Uſe it could be to conceal it, for ſhe ſoon muſt know it: However, we ſmothered it for two Days; but then, going abroad to buy ſomewhat, it was revealed to her, and ſhe that Moment fell into a Swoon. This happening where ſhe was known, and not many Doors from our Lodgings; ſhe was brought Home on a Couch, and put to Bed, where ſhe lay totally ſenſeleſs for above five Hours; only we could perceive ſhe breathed, and that ſhe had ſtill a ſlow Pulſe. We ſent for a Surgeon, and had her blooded, and uſing proper Remedies, brought her to herſelf again; but the Agonies the poor Creature fell into, when ſhe began to feel the Return of her Reaſon, almoſt diſtracted her Brain.

Offering of Comfort in theſe Caſes, and reaſoning upon them, is but putting an Extinguiſher over a Vulcano; it burſts out the fiercer for it: So, to let her have her raving Fits quite out, I judged would be beſt for her, only watching to prevent her attempting any Injury to herſelf. I ſat up with her, and towards Morning, I perceived ſhe was falling into Labour, but

but, with the Help of a Midwife I ſent for, before Noon, ſhe was delivered of a dead Child, and was herſelf in extream Danger of her Life. I continued with her, almoſt Night and Day, for a Week, or thereabouts, when ſhe began to grow better, and then I took a little Reſt myſelf. I did all I could to keep Don *Henriques* eaſy, who was now daily fretting for our Delay; but I was reſolved not to ſtir, till I had ſeen her out of Danger; and in about five Weeks, ſhe was pure well again, but very melancholy. I then enquired into her Circumſtances, and how Captain *Powell* had left her; but ſhe broke out in Tears, and told me, that ſhe believed all he had was gone to the Bottom with him; for he being but a young Man, had raiſed all the Money he could to buy a Share in the Veſſel, and to help freight her; ſo that, ſhe ſaid, ſhe and her Child were left in a very deplorable Condition.

Having been Partners together in Adverſity, I could no ways avoid compaſſionating her in her Difficulties; and having previouſly conſulted Don *Henriques* upon it, and he readily conſenting, I aſked her, if ſhe would take her Chance with me? She told me, ſhe would gladly embrace the Offer; but, as I was but upon precarious Terms myſelf with the old People, though ſhe hoped they would treat me kindly, yet taking her and her Child with me, might,

might, perhaps, occaſion ſome Uneaſineſs to myſelf on her Account. This I alſo informed my Huſband of, but he (wanting at any Rate to be gone, and imagining that I ſhould depart with Reluctance, till ſhe was ſomehow provided for) made no Manner of Scruple of taking her with us; ſo, having agreed that Point, we ſet Sail, and, after a fine Paſſage, arrived ſafe at the *Brazils*.

CHAP. XVIII.

Rejoicings on their Arrival. Don Paboia's *Compliment to the Author. Don* Henriques *made Governor of a Fort. Don* Paboia *dies. Don* Henriques *endeavours to ſucceed in his Government, but is diſappointed. Difference between him and the new Governor. New Governor demands Don* Henriques's *Commiſſion. He refuſes. Prepare for War. Fort beſieged. Beſiegers repulſed. The grand Battle. Don* Henriques *gains the Victory. Sends Terms of Peace. Are rejected. Prepare for another Battle. Don* Henriques *procures Aid from the* Indians. *Is fearful of them.*

DON *Paboia* and his Family, having heard nothing of Don *Henriques*, from his Departure, till his Arrival, being above twelve Months,

Months, no ſooner did our Ship arrive, but the whole City were at the Water-ſide to ſee us land. The Governour himſelf, my now Father-in-Law, handed me out of the Barge, and took me into his own Coach, in which my Mother waited; and Don *Henriques*, and *Biddy* with her Son, went in that which one of my two Siſters waited in, and we were conducted Home, through the Acclamations of a vaſt ſurrounding Populace.

No ſooner had we entered the Palace, than Don *Henriques* took me in his Hand, and led me to his Father, whoſe Bleſſing we implored; then to his Mother, who having likewiſe given us hers, and we having ſaluted our Siſters, Don *Henriques* preſented Mrs. *Powell* and her Son to them all, who welcomed her alſo.

I was exceedingly pleaſed with my Reception amongſt them, but when Don *Henriques*, in the Relation of his Travels, and the Occurrences he had met with, came to the Story of meeting with my Father, and had not only repreſented him as one of the compleateſt Gentlemen in the World, but the handſome Manner in which he had preſented him with the Ten Thouſand Dollars, and ſhewed him the Letter it was encloſed in, old Don *Paboia* was in Raptures, and running to me, and taking me in his Arms, Daughter, ſays he, you have compleated my Happineſs; every Thing I have hitherto heard of you,

has

has been but a faint Repreſentation of your Merit, nor can any Expreſſion of mine convey to your Ear the true Affection I bear you; but to hear, that you are ſo far from being beneath my Son in Quality, (for their lay all my Fear) that your Alliance adds an Honour to my Houſe, gives me inexpreſſible Satisfaction.

It was not long before my Father-in-Law gave Don *Henriques* the Government of an Inland Fort, where a Garriſon was kept, to curb the Inroads of the *Indians*; to which we uſually went twice a Year, ſpending a Month or ſix Weeks at a Time, and then returning to our Father's; ſo that we ſpent about ſix Years in all the Delights this World affords, and I had in this Time, born five Children, two only of whom were living, a Son and Daughter. But then Don *Paboia* died, on whoſe Deceaſe, Don *Henriques* came into a vaſt Fortune, as well as his Mother, with a handſome Proviſion for his Siſters.

Don *Henriques*, on his Father's Death, hoped to have Intereſt enough at the Court of *Portugal*, to get his Father's Government; and accordingly ſtopped all Shipping in the Harbours, till he had prepared Letters to ſeveral great Men for that Purpoſe, and diſpatched a light Veſſel to carry them; but by what Means I never knew, his Agent was told, that the Government was diſpoſed of, and the next Summer, a new one arrived;

arrived; when Don *Henriques* retired to his Government of the Fort I mentioned before, very much chagrined at his Diſappointment.

The new Governour, hearing that Don *Henriques* had ſollicited for his Poſt; and not finding him ſo ſubmiſſive at his Arrival as he expected; made an Attempt to draw him into a Snare, by Means of ſome of his Creatures, purpoſely employed to entrap him into the Commiſſion of an Act, which the Governour purpoſed to object to him as a Neglect of Duty, in order to diſplace him, without ſubjecting himſelf to Complaint; but Don *Henriques* ſeeing through the Fineſſe, and declaring himſelf too freely upon it, to ſome who conveyed it to the Governour, with the uſual Embelliſhments in ſuch Caſes, the Governour ſent to demand his Commiſſion, which Don *Henriques* refuſing to ſurrender, the Governour marched againſt him with a ſtrong Force to diſpoſſeſs him. This Don *Henriques* having timely Notice of, he called the Officers of the Fort before him, and there explaining to them the State of the Diſpute between him and the Governour, and that he was informed of the Governour's March againſt him; he demanded whether they would ſtand by him or not, in repelling Force by Force; and they all promiſing to defend him with their Lives, he ordered the Garriſon, conſiſting of ſix Hundred Men, to be drawn up on the Platform; and propoſing the ſame Queſti-

on

on to them, they all promiſed the ſame Aſſiſtance, for he was exceedingly beloved by all his Men. Then examining the Stores, and finding them for his Purpoſe, he called a Council of War, to deliberate what Courſe to take. They were unanimous, that the Queſtion ſhould firſt be put throughout the whole Diſtrict, under the Direction of the Fort, to all who were able to bear Arms, Whether they would aſſiſt their Governour, in Caſe of any Attempt upon him; when nine Parts in ten of them, readily offered their Service, and coming to the Rendezvous at the Fort, they muſtered together full eighteen Hundred Men. The Queſtion then was, Whether they ſhould go to meet the new Governour, and endeavour to accommodate Matters; and, in Caſe of Diſagreement, ſhould offer them Battle before they arrived at the Fort? Here the Council were divided in their Opinions, but the Majority were for meeting them on the Plains; for that at laſt they could but retreat to the Fort, as their dernier Reſort.

This Opinion carriing it, they all ſallied forth, determining not to go above two Days March from the Fort. The ſecond Day of their Departure, we obſerved a Body of Men deſcending from the Woods, to the Left of the Fort, in full March; and began to be in a terrible Fright, having but one Hundred and Fifty Men left in Garriſon; and there ſeemed to be not leſs than a Thouſand of the Aſſailants. We prepared to give

give them as warm a Reception as we could, and to loſe the Fort but with our Lives.

This was a terrible Time to myſelf and Mrs. *Powell*; for what would become of us, and our little ones, if they ſhould get the better of us? Our Men encouraged us to keep a good Heart, aſſuring us, that having no Artillery, the Enemy would not be able to take the Fort. They had formed themſelves into three Attacks, by Noon, and were attempting to ſcale the Outworks, but were every where vigorioufly repulſed; for our Guns being brought forward, as far as we could with Safety, gauled them prodigiouſly, and by Night we had killed at leaſt three Hundred of them.

The greater Hardſhips upon us was, that we had not Hands ſufficient to relieve the Guard at Night, for the Enemy not retreating, we were obliged all to be on Duty; and, it being a dark Night, we were compelled to form a Line of our Men, quite round the Fort, leſt they ſhould attack us unprovided.

About three Hours in the Night, we received a Meſſenger fron Don *Henriques*, enquiring the Cauſe of our Firing, which he heard in the Day Time; we informed him what had happened, the Slaughter we had made, and the Diſpoſition we were in, and Hopes we had of defending the Fort againſt all the Attempts of the Enemy; and hearing this, the Meſſenger returned the ſame Night.

In

In the Morning the Enemy renewed the Attack, but were on every Side ſo warmly received, that, after the Loſs of above Half their Men, they took Leave of us towards Night, and marched to the Woods. Our Garriſon could not be reſtrained from puſhing after them, in Spite of the Commanding Officer, for they would harraſs their Retreat; which he perceiving them obſtinately bent upon, led them forth, not leaving a Man behind; thus they purſued them till Twilight, cutting off near two Hundred more of them: They then returned into the Garriſon, and took all the Refreſhment the Time would afford; and we heard no more of the Enemy.

The next Night, we received another Meſſage, to tell us that the Enemy were come within two Hours March of Don *Henriques*, and that they were reſolved for Battle in the Morning; and, after having informed him of the gallant Behaviour of our Garriſon, he returned to Don *Henriques*.

The next Day by Noon, both Parties were drawn up, about thirty Miles from the Fort, upon a ſpacious Plain, with Wood on both Sides. The Enemy were about three Thouſand Men, and Don *Henriques*'s Party not Seventeen Hundred. He placed his Men, five Hundred in each Wing, and the reſt in Front, with four of his Field Pieces, which were charged with

with Muſket Ball, behind the firſt Rank, and each Wing alſo having two Pieces charged as above.

The Enemy, by Reaſon of their Numbers, preſſed on the Engagement, and our Men retreating, drew them more eagerly forwards, till we came cloſe to our Cannon; when the Enemy, hoping to have gained the Battle without a Shot, and expecting us to fly, we made a ſmart Fire with our ſmall Arms, and at once falling back, and diſcharging our Field Pieces, made ſuch a terrible Havock, that beſt Part of their firſt Line being cut off, the reſt fled, with all imaginable Confuſion, to the ſecond Line; we following, and charging as we went, obtained another Fire before they could be reduced into any poſſible Order; which ſo diſheartned them, that they diſperſed, flying to their Wings, which by this Time ours had engaged, and routed; ſo that we obtained a compleat Victory.

We then called a Council of War, and therein concluded to ſend a Trumpet to the Governour, with Terms of Peace, and Submiſſion to our Duty on the Terms we propoſed; but he haughtily rejected them, and prepared to put himſelf at the Head of a freſh Body of Troops to attack us; as we alſo did to defend ourſelves; but we having exhauſted the Men of the whole Diſtrict under Don *Henriques*'s Government, could not ſo eaſily procure Aſſiſtance as he, who had

had ſo large a Country before him, under his Command; and being informed by Spies, that he was augmenting his Forces with twelve Thouſand Men, we determined to ſend to the *Indians*, on the Back of us, about an Hundred and Fifty Miles, to deſire their Aid, and Friendſhip. We did ſo, and they promiſed to ſupply us, with what Forces we wanted; and accordingly, in about a Month's Time, ſent us ſeven Thouſand Men under two of their petty Kings, or Generals.

This Sight, even of what was called our Friends, terrified us almoſt as much as that of ſo many profeſſed Enemies would have done; but there was no Help for it, we could not turn them back, though we ſcarce durſt truſt them; but we uſed them with all poſſible Humanity, and having Intelligence that the Governour was on his March, we ſet out to meet him where we did before.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Preparations for Meeting the Governour in the Field. Precautions to preſerve the Fort. A Detachment of the Governour's cut off. Diſpute between a Party of the Indians, *and Don* Henriques's *Men. The* Indians *murther them, rifle the Fort, and carry the Author, and all Don* Henriques's *Family into Captivity. Moſt cruel Uſage of them in their March. Arrive at the* Indian *Town. The Author's Treatment there. Her Reflections. The Priſoners are diſperſed. Five Months after have News of Don* Henriques's *March to their Relief. The* Indians *fly but firſt kill the Priſoners. How the Author eſcaped. Saves her* Indian *Miſtreſs. Diſcovers herſelf to Don* Henriques. *Their Greeting. Deſtroys the Town, and returns to the Fort.*

WE had all the Reaſon in the World to imagine, that as the Governour had failed of Succeſs in his Attempt upon the Fort the laſt Time; he would not omit now to ſend a ſtronger Force, better prepared for the Attack; and accordingly, we, by our Spies, got Intelligence of a very large Body coming round the Wood with Artillery; this cauſed a Council to be called, wherein it was determined to leave two Thouſand Men at the Fort, and to take Eight,

Eight, (for we now conſiſted of about ten Thouſand Men) to meet the Governour, and that fifteen Hundred of the two Thouſand, ſhould lye in Ambuſh in the Woods, till the Governour's Forces came up; when falling upon them, if we could but gain their Artillery, we hoped we ſhould have nothing to fear; for their great Guns would be uſeleſs, in a Wood-Fight.

This being determined, Don *Henriques* ſet out next Morning, and the Ambuſh the Night following, where they ſo well diſpoſed themſelves, that they did great Execution upon their Enemy, who were more than equal in Number; and ſeizing their Cannon, put all the Survivors to Flight.

Our Misfortune in this Skirmiſh was, that though we had gained a Victory, it was obtained by our Allies, not by us; for as they were ſeventeen Hundred *Indians* to about three Hundred of us, they could turn the Advantage of it, the Way moſt pleaſing to themſelves.

They returned the next Day to the Fort, with the Artillery taken from the Enemy; but when the commanding Officer for Don *Henriques* would have had it brought into the Fort, the *Indian* Commander oppoſed it; and Words growing high on each Side, the *Indians* fell on the *Portugueſe* Garriſon, and ſlew every Man of them that was left; then rifling the Fort

of all that was valuable, and ſecuring the Women, in all about Eleven of us, with our Children, they took as much Ammunition as they could poſſibly carry, with whatever elſe they pleaſed, and harneſſing themſelves to the Enemy's Cannon, marched off with all the Speed they could poſſibly make, over the Mountains; but finding the Difficulty of bringing up the Cannon, and having ſeveral other Mountains to paſs in their Retreat, they buried the Cannon in the Skirt of a Wood, on the further Side of the firſt Mountain, and marched Homewards with great Precipitancy, whipping us Women along before them, if we flagged ever ſo little, without the leaſt Shew of Compaſſion.

I had often felt the Frowns of Fortune before, and had been in great Extremity, but never in any equal to this; for all I had to fear from any of my paſt Misfortunes was, an approaching Death; but here, without Proſpect of ſo gentle a Relief, I was under perpetual Torment. For the firſt ſeven Days, we travelled at leaſt, fourteen Hours in the Twenty-four, each Day; ſo that our Shoes, which were never deſigned for climbing Rocks and Mountains, and ſuch hard Labour, were burſt to Pieces in about two Days, and in about two more, we were moſt of us entirely bare-footed. Our Feet frequently run down with Blood, and you might trace us, by the bloody Print of them, all the Way we went; for

for the ſharp rocky Soil cut them till they were quite raw, and the beſt Travelling we had was, in a moiſt Soil, when the Gaſhes were ſtopped with Mould and Mud. A Complaint brought us one or more Laſhes; and Limping a Curſe; which were all the Plaiſters our wounded Limbs were dreſſed with; and I would willingly have laid down and died on the Road, but for an Example I had lately had, of a Servant of mine: The poor young Creature, with a very long Day's Travel, (I think it was the Sixth) was ſo lame, weary, and ſpent, that ſhe could not lift her Legs from the Ground, ſufficiently to ſupport herſelf in Walking, but fell down, and cut her Arm and Forehead miſerably; another of my Maids (as well as ſhe could) endeavoured to help her to riſe, when an Officer coming up, licked and beat the poor Wench almoſt to Death for her charitable Intention; and then going to the poor wounded Creature, ſo abuſed her, that I was in Hopes he had killed her, and ridded her of her Miſery; but he kept on his Barbarity, and pricked her with his Lance, till he made her riſe, and move forward again.

I once more thought myſelf tolerably happy, when after about nine Days Journey we arrived at the *Indian* Town; for then I reſted myſelf, waſhing my Feet clean, and by the Help of ſome bruiſed Tobacco, which an old Woman, to whoſe Lot I fell, applied to my Feet, in about

fourteen Days I came tollerably to myſelf again, but my Feet never have been, or ever to my dying Day will be, ſo ſtrong as they were before.

Was I to recount the Hardſhips I ſuffered in this Journey, having two ſmall Children, either both in my Hands, or one at my Back, all the Way I went, every Groan of whom pierced my very Soul; with the ſeveral Reflections I made, and other Diſquietudes I ſuffered, through Lameneſs, and Wearineſs, and Stiffneſs of my Joints with Labour, and lying expoſed on the cold Earth; it would not be believed that I could have ſurvived it; ſo that, quitting this melancholy Subject, I ſhall, as well as I am able, give an Account of what befel me at the *Indian* Town.

After I became well enough to go Abroad, and ſtir a little, I was ſent to the Fields with my Children to hoe the Corn, and ſet to beat it at Home, and put upon Cookery in their Way; all which I did as well as I could, and endeavoured to pleaſe to the beſt of my Capacity; but ſtill, whenever I could get a Moment to myſelf, for I was not over work'd, I would lament over my poor Babes, and grieve more for the Sake of Don *Henriques* than for my own; for I was ſure his Indulgence and Love for me, and his Children, muſt render him the unhappieſt of Mortals. Then again, thinks I, he may be ſlain in the Battle with the Governour perhaps,

haps, and I am participating of imaginary Grief, which he may be paſt feeling. Then I would pleaſe myſelf to think, that if he ſurvived, he would never ſuffer me to remain where I was, but would root out the very Name of an *Indian* from the Continent, rather than permit me to continue in their Hands, if he was able to aſſiſt me. But, thinks I, what can he do? how can he raiſe Forces? it will be impoſſible; he is ſtripped by thoſe very *Indians*, of every Means of furniſhing himſelf with Aſſiſtance; for they have taken away all our Effects with them. Then I would bemoan myſelf again, and caſt away all further Hopes of Relief.

We Eleven Women, who as I told you were taken in the Fort, when the *Indians*, at their Return diſperſed themſelves about the Country, to their ſeveral Dwellings, were alſo diſtributed about with them, into divers Parts; and my Friend Mrs. *Powell*, with her Son, were ſent farther in Land. The Miſtreſs I lived with had a Son, who was one of them that took the Fort; and was a very dutiful Child, and greatly eſteemed among the *Indians*; ſo that I can't ſay, but I and my Children fared full as well, or rather better I believe, than any of them; and what I muſt ſay in praiſe of the *Indian* Men is, that though we were ſo much in Subjection to them, and were compelled to go almoſt naked, as they did; yet no Attempt was ever made on

our Chaſtity, by any of them, as I could hear; which I am apt to fancy, is owing to their low Diet; for ſure, no Creatures make leſs Account of eating than they.

We had now been five Months in this Captivity, having worn out all Expectations of Relief; when on a ſudden, one Morning, we ſaw a vaſt Body of People coming over the Ridge of a prodigious Hill, that over-looked our Town. Immediately the whole Country was in Arms, and ſending out a Scout to gain Intelligence, we were informed, that the remaining *Indians*, who had gone with Don *Henriques* againſt the Governour, were returning full of Reſentment at their Companions plundering the Fort, and retiring with the Booty, without informing them of it; and for leaving them in the Hands of the *Portugueſe*, to anſwer for the Outrage with their Lives. This Relation cauſed the utmoſt Conſternation in the Mind of every one, and ſeveral Embaſſies paſſed and repaſſed between them; but when Don *Henriques* ſent to demand a Reſtitution of his Effects, and a Return of the Captives, their Hearts quite ſunk within them; for they thought, that if he alſo was joined to their angry and abuſed Countrymen, they ſhould not be any ways able to ſtand their Ground. I knew very little of what was tranſacting at firſt; but upon Don *Henriques*'s Meſſage, my Maſter coming haſtily in, to inform

form his Mother of it, and prepare her for Flight; I hearing Don *Henriques*'s Name, could not imagine what was in Agitation; for I had only heard that the reſt of the *Indians* were on their Return: But obſerving my Miſtreſs to pack up ſome little valuable Things, which her Son had brought her, and ſeeing her throw ſeveral of her Houſhold Utenſils into a Well, I deſired to know what was the Matter? Matter, replied ſhe, we are all going to have our Throats cut, by one Don *Hycas*, they call him, the terribleſt Fellow in the World. I then found out the Miſtery, and ſeeing my Miſtreſs in the utmoſt Confuſion; and hearing her mutter to herſelf, that ſuch an old Woman as ſhe could never get up the next Hill, but be one of the firſt that would be knocked on the Head, come Miſtreſs, ſays I, don't be afraid, don't ſtir, if it is only Don *Hycas* a coming, he is my particular Friend, and for my Sake will protect you; do not ſtir, I ſay, but remain cloſe by me, and no Hurt ſhall befal you; you have been a kind Miſtreſs to me, and I now will return your Favours.

I had ſcarce ended my comfortable Exhortation, but in comes my Maſter; Mother, ſays he, we are juſt going off in a Body, and wait only for you; but we have agreed to kill all the Priſoners firſt; he was then lifting up a great wooden Sword he had in his Hand, to diſpatch me, and the Children; when his Mother ſtep-

ping between me and the Blow; hold your Hand, Son, ſays ſhe, or ſtrike me firſt, for this Woman ſhall not die, neither will I fly with you; and if you will be ruled by me, ſtay where you are, and ſhut yourſelf up here; let the reſt go if they will, but ſtay you with me.

My Maſter aſked her, if ſhe was mad, but the old Woman was ſo much out of Breath, ſhe could not reply to him. Says he, they are now down the Hill, and upon us. I will not ſtir a Foot ſays ſhe, ſit down by me. Mother, ſays he, if you chooſe to loſe your Life here, I don't; I will go with my Company; and immediately ruſhing out, we ſaw him no more. I then went and uſed many Arguments to pacify my Miſtreſs, and at laſt told her that Don *Hycas* as ſhe called him, was my Huſband, and that theſe, pointing to them, were his Children; and, ſays I, for ſaving our Lives, he will do every Thing in the World that you can deſire of him; this very much revived her, and ſhe begged me to tell him, ſhe had not uſed me ill, and heartily wiſhed ſhe had uſed me better.

Whilſt we were thus engaged, we heard the Trumpets at the Entrance of the Town, and the Children were running out of the Hut to ſee them come; but having heard what my Maſter had ſaid, of deſtroying the Slaves, I did not chooſe they ſhould be ſeen, till I was firſt ſure that Don *Henriques* was there in Perſon. The Trumpets now ſounding nearer and nearer us, and every Thing

Thing being quite huſh in the Town, I opened the Door a little, and from thence could ſee all the Inhabitants croſſing a great Plain; ſo I told my Miſtreſs of it, and taking my Children, one in each Hand, and the old Woman a-breaſt of us, we were walking to meet the *Portugueſe*, not being above a Furlong from us.

Don *Henriques* fancying, as he came nearer, that he ſaw ſome of his Captives, by the Whiteneſs of our Skins, for we had only a Cloth round our Middles, clapped Spurs to his Horſe, and ſprung forward ſingly to meet us, when being now near enough to be ſure it was me, and I at that Inſtant calling out to him, he beckoned with his Hand to the Troops to halt; but ſeeing me almoſt naked, and the Children quite ſo as ever they were born, he alighting from his Horſe, threw his Cloak over my Shoulders, and ſtripping off his Waiſtcoat, threw it over his Daughter; then embracing us ſeverally, aſked me, who that Figure was, I had got with me? Meaning the old Woman; I told him it was the Miſtreſs to whoſe Lot I fell, and who had not only uſed me with great Humanity, but had juſt preſerved the Lives of myſelf and Children; he hearing this, became more enamoured of my Miſtreſs, than of myſelf, or his Children; he careſſed and kiſſed her, till ſhe was quite confounded, and ordered me to tell her, he ſhould ever after look upon her as his own Mother; ſo making us re-

turn to her Hut, he went back to the Troops, and brought us all ſome Cloaths to cover us, and leaving a Guard of fifty Men round the Hut, he marched quite through the Town; but finding not one Inhabitant there, he having drawn up his *Portugueſe* Troops in proper Order, ſent to invite in the *Indians* he had brought with him, and whom he had engaged to halt at ſome Diſtance; when enquiring which of them were of that Settlement, and finding not above two amongſt them, but what came from more diſtant Parts, he ordered, Marks to be ſet upon their Huts, that they might not be moleſted, and gave the Plunder of all the reſt to the *Indians*; and ſtaying there two Days to refreſh his Men, he ordered, at his Departure, the whole Town to be razed, the two *Indians* who had their Huts there, rather chooſing to depart with the reſt, than to await the Injuries they might expect to receive at the Return of their Brethren.

Being thus once more delivered into the Hands of my dear Huſband, my Children and I were cloathed in the beſt Manner that the Place and Circumſtances would afford, and we all returned to the Fort again, I taking my old Miſtreſs with me, and maintaining her at Eaſe and Tranquillity. We were too full of Caution in our Return, not to take the propereſt Means for Prevention of any Moleſtation in our March; for though the *Indians* ſeemed to fly at our Approach,

proach, yet we knew not the Country ſo well as they did; and it being very Mountainous and Woody, it was difficult for us, with our Horſes to paſs it, neither could we well ſee any where, Half a Mile before us; ſo that we were under ſtrong Apprehenſions of a Surprize; and what we dreaded moſt was, that it would be by Night; ſo that what with poſting Guards about us, ſending out Scouts, and viewing the Country, (which Don *Henriques*, having me and the Children with him, was very diligent to perform himſelf) he had no Time on the Journey to inform me what had happened in my Abſence, or to enquire into the Particulars of our Calamity.

CHAP. XX.

Don Henriques *acquaints the Author of his Information of the Villany at the Fort, and what was the Conſequence of it till his Return thither. Prepare for their Return to* Portugal. *Are in a Storm. Arrive at the* Madeiras. *Don* Henriques's *Death. Arrives at* Liſbon.

SO ſoon as we arrived at the Fort, and had interchanged our mutual Careſſes, I aſked him what we ſhould do, now we were plundered of all we had? for, ſays I, they have ſtripped

ped you of all your Effects, I ſuppoſe. Oh *Patty*, ſays he, how could I then ever have look't you and my dear Children in the Face again? only to have been the Witneſs of your Miſery? No, my Love, ſays he, there is nothing valuable gone, but ſome Furniture, and a little Plate; and as for the Furniture I make no Account of it, for it muſt have been either left behind us, or tranſported very ſoon. What does my Love mean, ſaid I? I'll tell you, ſays he, the News of your Diſaſter came to my Ears the Night before the Governour and I were to have engaged. I received it by a Soldier of the Garriſon, who, during the Maſſacre, had concealed himſelf between two Walls at the Corner of one of the Baſtions; he, ſo ſoon as it was dark, ventured out, and came to me. You may imagine, my Dear, ſays he, that the Condition I fell into, on the Report of this News, did not leave me capable of the Regulation of my own Senſes, much leſs of an Army, and juſt ready to engage too: I therefore, ſo ſoon as ever I could calm the firſt Rage of my Paſſion (having enjoined the Meſſenger Silence, as to the Report he brought me) ſummoned ſeven of my chief Officers to my Tent, where, after ſtating the Caſe to them, and laying before them my Information, I entreated them to adviſe with me, in the moſt cordial Manner, what was to be done in this Exigency? for I told them, that the Anguiſh

of

of my Soul for the Loſs of my Family, ſat too heavy upon me to leave room for my Faculties to exert themſelves in our proper Defence. They agreed it was impoſſible for me to be ſo compoſed, or vigilant, as my Station would require me to be the next Day; for we were now inevitably to fight, or fly, we had no Alternative. At length we came to a Reſolution of ſending a Deputation to the Governour, to treat on Conditions of Accommodation, before he ſhould come to the Knowledge of our Diſaſter, and to conclude a Treaty at any Rate; this took up a great deal of Time, for ſometimes a Truce was agreed on for two Days, ſometimes for three, and ſo from Time to Time renewed, as there was Occaſion; but we ſeeking above all Things Diſpatch, and they poſtponing every Thing to the Governour's Honour, which at any Rate was to be gratified; as we gave up, ſtill they grew more and more tenacious, ſo that at laſt it was concluded, that I ſhould, in ſix Months, deliver up the Fort to ſuch new Governour as ſhould be ſent to ſucceed me, and have Leave to retire where I pleaſed with my Effects, and all belonging to me, and have Leave, if I choſe it, and when I pleaſed, to ſhip myſelf off.

Now, my Dear, added he, came on my Trial; we had as yet kept our Loſs at the Fort, both from the Knowledge of the Enemy, and of our own Forces; but at the End of the third Day

of

of our Return, as we came near the Fort, I ordered them to halt, and commanding the Ranks to encloſe round me, I aſcended a little Eminence, from whence I might be beſt heard; then haranguing the Troops, I told them, that as I did not without the niceſt Deliberation lead them forth to Battle, ſo, though we had condeſcended, to what I could not help terming an inglorious Peace, I was willing to let them know what had happened, that they might the better judge of my Motives for it; and from thence either condemn or acquit me. You know, ſays I, my Fellow-ſoldiers and faithful Allies, that I left behind me in yonder Fort, (pointing to it, then in our Sight,) a Garriſon of full two Thouſand effective Men, fifteen Hundred of which I ordered upon an Expedition to diſconcert the Enemy's Stratagems, and I muſt inform you, they did ſo, having killed and diſperſed the Forces ſent againſt the Fort, and taken all their Artillery; hitherto you will acquit my Judgment: But alas! a Leader can't ſee the Hearts of even his Allies, his Friends, his Confederates; would you think, that the Fort we left ſo well garriſoned, and ſupplied, is only a ſolitary Pile of Buildings, without one human Soul in it; without any Baggage, any Ammunition; not to mention my own Wife and Children, whom I hold dearer to me than my Life; but that is my own private Loſs; I muſt grieve

the

the Loſs of the little Stores of you my Companions, and Fellow-ſoldiers; and would you think, that this Damage has happened to us, through the Means of our ſeeming Friends, and Allies, the *Indians?* You, Gentlemen *Indians*, look not at me, as if I condemned you; no, whatever you depoſited in the Fort for Security, is plundered too; you are not the Enemy, but the Injured. To be ſhort, my whole *Portugueſe* Garriſon is cut off, all our Properties plundered, and my Wife, Children, and Family, either murdered, or carried off into Captivity.

I now made a Pauſe, to obſerve what Effect it had upon the Hearers; when, as I hoped, the *Indian* King, who was with me, invoked his Deity, requiring to be aſſured of what he heard. I then called my Informer, and ſetting him by me, he confirmed what I had delivered, as being an Eye-Witneſs of it, and the only one, he ſaid, who had the good Fortune to eſcape the Maſſacre. Says *Benah Marak*, (for that was the *Indian* King's Name) I will never behold my Family till this Villany is repaid: Hear you, my Countrymen, hear you the Treachery? They anſwered, they did, and would ſtand by him in all his Purpoſes. Then I declare, ſays he, my right Hand ſhall never touch my Wife, till Attonement is made for this Injury. Is it not our Baſeneſs makes theſe Chriſtians our Enemies? Why then do we complain that they

they are cruel? Can they ſee their Wives dragg'd from their Embraces, and not return the Violence? Come, my Countrymen, let us join in doing Right to the Injured; and, Sir, ſays he to me, as the Indignity offered to yourſelf, muſt excite your utmoſt Reſentment againſt the Aggreſſors, I will put myſelf and Subjects wholly under your Direction in this Affair, that I may remove any Imputation againſt us, for Partiality to our Countrymen; for ſuch they are, though not of the ſame Nation. This ſaid, the Field rung with Acclamations, and we proceeded directly to the Fort, the King following me; and the *Indians*, who before formed a ſeparate Corps, joining promiſcuouſly with my Men.

Being arrived at the Fort, it was a diſmal Entry to me, without you, my deareſt Wife, and my Children; but it was Time, rather reſolutely to bear Misfortunes, than to ſink under them; ſo I ordered all common Decencies to be paid to the Dead, and taking my Steward with me, we went to view our Stores, and whether any Thing was left us to ſubſiſt on; when, to our exceſſive Joy, we perceived they had not diſcovered our Magazines, which at that Time, in Expectation of a Siege there, I had taken Care to ſupply very plentifully both with Corn and Rum, and every Thing elſe we ſhould want.

Upon

Upon this good News, I gave every Man in the Army half a Pint of Rum, which ſo united their Affections to me, that they would have killed their own Parents for a Word ſpeaking. I gave them Corn, and proportionable of all other Stores; and, during the Time we ſtay'd, put every Thing in Order, for Fear of another Attack. I gave them Plenty of freſh Proviſions, encouraging them, till they vowed they would never deſert me. Then, my Dear, we ſet forward to chaſtize the Traitors, and, if poſſible, to recover the Captives; though, I muſt confeſs, I very much feared I ſhould not have found you alive.

I then told him of the bloody Reſolution that was taken, the Morning he appeared, and how near I was to my Death; but whether it was executed on the other Priſoners, I could not tell, having never ſeen one of them from the Night we arrived at the Settlement.

Our next Buſineſs was to prepare for our Return to *Portugal*, for Don *Henriques* determined to ſtay no longer in the *Brazils* than juſt to get in ſome of his Money, and provide himſelf againſt the Voyage. This took up above two Months, and having taken Leave of our Friends, we departed, and highly pleaſed I was, that we were returning into *Europe* again. The greateſt Concern I had, and what indeed ſat very heavy upon me, was the Loſs of Mrs. *Powell*,

Powell and her Son. If I had been aſcertained of their Murder, I ſhould have ſubmitted to their Fate; but was quite melancholy to think of their Continuance in Captivity. My only Comfort, ſave my Huſband and Children, had for a long Time been my good Woman, who I called my *Guardia*; for I had no Woman Servant left at the Fort, and having her, did not chooſe to take one to Sea with me. Now, though ſhe was very tractable, and would ſuffer nothing to be undone, ſhe thought would be agreeable to me, yet I uſed her not as a Servant, for ſhe always eat and drank at my own Table, and Don *Henriques* called her *Madre*; ſo that, though ſhe could not be called a Servant, ſhe was entirely as uſeful to me in the Room of one.

We had been but five Days at Sea, when a violent Tempeſt, at the North-weſt, fell on us, and drove us many Leagues to the Southward, and much ado we had to weather it; but the Wind coming about South-eaſt, ſet us going again, though but ſlowly. We met with nothing remarkable at Sea, till we came to the *Madeiras*, where we were to ſtay for ſome Days; ſo we all went on Shore, and refreſhed ourſelves. Here we propoſed for a Day's Fiſhing, Don *Henriques* being a great Lover of freſh Fiſh; and, as the Men we had employed to catch them, were hauling the Net on Shore

(one

(one of them at each End) the Net hanging by ſome Accident at Bottom, Don *Henriques* taking up a long Pole, which lay by him, to clear the Net with, and over-reaching himſelf, fell headlong into the River: The Fiſherman ſeeing this, immediately left his Net, and ſpringing to his Aſſiſtance, helped him out in a miſerable Condition. I begged him to make the beſt of his Way home to our Lodging, it not being two Furlongs off; but he being a Lover of the Sport, in ſpite of all I could urge to the contrary, would tarry till the Net was landed, and then till the Fiſh were ſorted; which Delay ſtriking a Chill to his Blood, the next Day he was laid up with a violent Fever, and the fourth Day, the Captain giving Notice that he muſt ſail the next Morning, no Prayers or Entreaties of mine could prevail with him to ſtay till he was better, and then to take the Opportunity of ſome other Veſſel; but, though it blew almoſt a Storm next Morning, he would be taken from his Bed, and conveyed to the Ship, telling me, to quiet my preſſing Inſtances for his Stay, that he was much better, and ſhould have little elſe to do on Board the Ship but to nurſe himſelf, and did not doubt being ſoon well again.

I own his Obſtinacy provoked me very much, for I was perſuaded, as he was riſing up the Side of the Ship, that he would never return

return that Way alive again; and ſo indeed it happened to my Sorrow, for he grew worſe and worſe, from the Time he came on Board, and in leſs than ten Days died, light headed, and raving. This was a freſh Sort of Calamity, to what I had ever felt; and my Senſation of it was more real, as there had always ſubſiſted the moſt unfeigned Love between us; we were but as the two Arms of the ſame Body, and each as Aſſiſtant to the other; neither ſuffered, but the other was oppreſſed; neither could have Pleaſure, but the other rejoiced: But he was now gone, and had left me two fatherleſs Babes, the eldeſt but nine, and the other eight Years old.

It is true, I had Effects on Board to a conſiderable Value, but no Means of encreaſing them, or even of keeping them at a Stay; and then to live upon the Principal, would, like a Canker, eat it out. We were bound indeed to *Portugal*, but where my Huſband's Relations were, or who they were, I knew not: However, thither I was bound, and thither I muſt go.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Several Suits againſt her on Don Henriques's *Account. She is in the utmoſt Diſtreſs. How ſhe proceeded. Came to Tryal. Had loſt all Don* Henriques's *Effects, if Mrs.* Powell *had not appeared by Accident. The Judge ſuſpects a Fraud, but is undeceived. Gives her all, and condemns himſelf of Prejudice againſt her. Mrs.* Powell's *Account of what befel herſelf among the* Indians. *Set Sail for* England.

I Arrived with my Children ſafe at *Lisbon*; and, as I had cauſed the Corps of my deceaſed Huſband to be preſerved, as well as our Circumſtances would allow, on Board the Ship, and to be encloſed in a Coffin, I had it interred on Shore, ſoon after we arrived; but myſelf, or Children, did not ſtir out of a Lodging we had hired, for more than a Month afterwards. The Talk of the Corps of Don *Henriques* being buried, was ſoon blazed about *Lisbon*, and I was no ſooner publickly ſeen Abroad, than an Officer was ſent into my Houſe, to ſeal up and ſecure all my late Huſband's Effects, as dying inteſtate. I was miſerably ſurprized at this, and revolving in my Mind what I ſhould do, when I was ſerved with a Citation to produce an Account

count of all Don *Henriques*'s perſonal Eſtate, and with another to anſwer to a Libel againſt me, for taking upon me the Name and Character of his Wife, having never been lawfully married to him.

Theſe ſevere Strokes, one upon another, ſo ſoon after the Death of my Husband, ſo dejected me, that I was not able to bear up againſt them, being in a ſtrange Land, and entirely deſtitute of a Friend to adviſe or aſſiſt me. This drove me to ſuch Perplexity, I was almoſt beſide myſelf; for it was impoſſible for me ever to produce any Teſtimonials of my Marriage, in a diſtant Country, ſo many Years paſt, without knowing the Name of the Prieſt, or at what Church it was; and then, if I could do this, I was now deprived of the Means of accompliſhing it; for all my Effects were ſealed up, and I durſt no more open a Seal, or embezzle them, than I durſt commit Murder. At length, it came into my Head, that the Captain of the Ship, who was known at *Lisbon*, could teſtify Don *Henriques*'s Acknowledgement of me for his Wife; as for *Guardia*, though ſhe knew it well enough, from my Husband's Acts and Behaviour to me; yet I feared ſhe would make but an indifferent Evidence, in a Court of Law; ſo I ran immediately, as my only Hope, to find out the Captain; but my firſt News was, that he was failed, and no body could

could inform me when he was expected to return.

My being thus diſappointed in the Captain, encreaſed my Vexation very much; when mentioning the Dilemma I was in to my Landlord, he told me, he was an intire Stranger to theſe Things of himſelf, but that he would recommend me to an Advocate, who, if any Good was to be done, he could anſwer would do it for me. I deſired my Landlord to ſend for him, which he did, and when he came, and had heard my Caſe, and had aſked me ſeveral Queſtions; I find, ſays he, by the Citation, ſhaking his Head, that it is your Husband's own Uncle, who would recover theſe Effects. Now, ſays he, I don't ſee, by all you have ſaid, what Proof you can make of your Marriage; and if you can make none, you muſt be caſt. But when ſhall I know my Doom, ſays I, and when will it be over? Nay, ſays he, that will depend upon the Money you have to ſpend. I have none, ſays I, but what little is in my Purſe, ſave what is under Seal. Can you take upon you, ſays he, to ſwear, that you believe, if you had Money to ſend to *Leghorn*, where you ſay you was married, that you could procure Teſtimonials of your Marriage? Yes, ſurely, ſays I, that may be ſworn ſafely enough, for I could cry it about the Town, and by ſome Means or other find the Prieſt out. So he drawing up my

my Oath in Form, I ſwore it; then, upon Application to the Courts, I had five hundred Dollars allowed me. I was now to be at the Expence of ſending to *Leghorn*, which I did, and, after all the Enquiry I could cauſe to be made there, at the Expiration of ſix Months, I received Anſwer, that no ſuch Thing could be diſcovered. Then we made an Affidavit, that we believed it might be proved at the *Brazils*, and I had a thouſand Dollars allowed me for that, but in twelve Months more that returned a Blank. We then made another Affidavit for *Leghorn* again, and then another for *Brazil*, till four Years were expired; at laſt, failing in every Attempt, the old Woman, my *Guardia*, turning Chriſtian, I was forced to put the Iſſue of my Cauſe upon her ſingle Evidence, of the Behaviour of Don *Henriques* to me, and his always calling me, and treating me as his Wife.

The Day of Trial being come, I muſt own, my Lawyers did me all the Juſtice that could be expected; and though I had no Reaſon to blame them, I plainly perceived I ſhould have a Sentence againſt me; for the Judge having begun to pronounce it, he ſeemed to ſay, that when young People, to gratify their lewd Deſires, take Harlots to their Embraces, if they are pleaſed to cohabit with them, they are obliged to call them Wife, to ſcreen themſelves from

from the Cenſures of the Spiritual Court; and as for Behaviour only, without Words declaratory of the Marriage, it is plain, they take ſuch Women in the Room of, and uſe them in ſuch Manner as Wives; from whence, therefore, and from the Appearance of Things, he ſaid, he was of Opinion no Judgment could be formed; wherefore, ſays he, and for that this Woman is not able to procure any Evidence of her Marriage, as undoubtedly, if ſhe was a lawful Wife, ſhe might do; I am of Opinion, and do pronounce, that all the Goods, Effects, and Eſtate of the late Don *Henriques de Paboia*, of right do belong——Here, I being ready to ſink into the Earth, and turning my Eyes towards Heaven, ſpied Mrs. *Powell*: I then ſcreaming out, put a Stop to the Proceedings of the Judge, till he knew what was the Matter. My Lawyer, ſeeing I was falling into a Fit, begged the Judge to ſtay Sentence for a Moment, becauſe his Client was taken ill, and he deſired ſhe might hear it: This, though urged by him with great Vehemence, he could hardly prevail in; for the Judge, attributing my Diſorder to a Senſe of my Guilt, was with great Difficulty reſtrained from proceeding; but what was his, and the whole Court's Surprize, when, recovering myſelf a little, I told him, I could now prove my Marriage. He made a Piſh at me, and ſaid, he ſuppoſed by ſome more black

Evidence. I replied no, it was by one who was preſent at it. He anſwered, he would be very glad to find me an honeſt Woman, for in truth he ſuſpected me. I then went to Mrs. *Powell*, and looking her in the Face, though ſuch a Series of Trouble had much altered me, I aſked if ſhe knew me? O! my dear *Patty*, ſays ſhe, know you? Yes, I come hither purpoſely after Don *Henriques* and you. Alas! Child, ſays I, he is no more, and I am brought up as a Criminal here.—Hold, ſays the Judge, don't give her a Leſſon to tell the Court. Pray, Sir, ſays I, examine her yourſelf, I'll ſay no more.

The Judge then aſked her, how long ſhe had known me? She told him, near twenty Years. Where did you ſee her laſt? She ſaid, at the *Brazils*. Where before that, ſays he? At *Leghorn*, ſays ſhe. What did ſhe do there? She was there before me, ſays Mrs. *Powell*, and what ſhe did then, I can't ſay, but after I came, ſhe was married there.——At ſaying this, a general Murmur ran through the Court, and every one ſeemed to rejoice.—To whom, ſays the Judge? To Don *Henriques de Paboia*, ſays ſhe, the only Son of Don *Cortez de Paboia*. How do you know it was Don *Cortez*'s Son, ſays the Judge? Becauſe I went over with him, and his Lady, to *Brazil*, and lived with them, at Don *Cortez*'s Houſe, till he died. Was you at the Wedding,

ſays

ſays the Judge? I was, ſays ſhe, and ſaw, and heard them married, by a true Prieſt, at *Leghorn*. Pray who are you, ſays the Judge?—I am juſt now arrived from *Brazil*, ſays Mrs. *Powell*, I have not been an Hour on Shore; my Captain came with me to the Door, and telling me, I might ſtep in here, and hear Cauſes, till he came to me, is the Reaſon of my being here.

She had ſcarce concluded, when the Captain, who was very well known at *Lisbon*, entring the Court, confirmed her being but juſt landed, and that it was impoſſible any Story could have been concerted between them, but what muſt have been tranſacted in Court. The Judge then riſing, and looking up; Great Judge, ſays he, it is to thee I appeal for my Innocence; I had framed, and was about to pronounce a wrong Judgment, contrary to my Will: I am unworthy to judge, but where thou directeſt the Cauſe: How many Errors may I have committed in this Seat, if, what I was going in the Integrity of my Heart to pronounce, is a Fallacy, and might have been ſo fatal to the innocent Perſon before me, and to her Children: It is incumbent on me now to reverſe my intended Doom, and I do hereby give to the injured Party, and her Children, all that appertained to Don *Henriques*, at the Time of his Death, and award the Appellant to pay her the full Coſts that ſhe hath expended, in the juſt Defence of

this Cauſe: And, as I perceive myſelf capable of being prejudiced, as I own I was againſt her, I Sentence myſelf to be excluded from this Bench, nor will I ever aſcend it more. Then deſcending, the whole Court became ſo clamorous, there was no hearing a Word; ſome crying, at the moving Delivery of the Sentence, and ſome ſhouting for Joy and Gladneſs, at my unexpected Deliverance; only my Adverſary, of the whole Company, moving off, with Chagrin on his Countenance.

I was conducted, with Mrs. *Powell*, to my Lodgings, through prodigious Shouts of the Populace; who, as we paſſed, being ſeverally informed of the Occaſion, joined their Voices to ſalute us. The firſt Thing I did was, to return Thanks for my miraculous and providential Eſcape; and then greeting Mrs. *Powell*, enquired into the State of her Affairs, and into what had befallen her ſince our Separation.

She told me, that being ſent to a Settlement further up the Country than I was, her Neighbourhood were alarmed one Morning, with a vaſt Number of People coming againſt them; when, ſending to enquire into the Cauſe of it, they were informed, that it was an eaſtern Settlement of *Indians*, flying from Don *Henriques*, who, with a vaſt Body of other *Indians*, were on their March againſt them, vowing to root them out, and deſtroy all their Settlements. This

put

put them into great Confuſion, and every one, packing up what they could carry, marched ſtill further into the Country; but fearing to be overtaken, and that Don *Henriques* would march ſtrait on, they ſtruck off to the Right, to deceive him; when, after ſome Days March, they fell in with the *Indians* that had accompanied Don *Henriques*, and who were returning to their Homes. She ſaid, a ſtrong Engagement enſued, in which many were ſlain on both Sides; but the returning *Indians* being Victors, they carried off all the Plunder, and alſo herſelf, and one of my Maids, who was ſtill living; all the reſt being, as ſhe heard, murdered at the firſt Surprize, upon the Approach of Don *Henriques*; and ſhe wondered the more to ſee me, believing me to have been among the Slain.

She told me, ſhe lived with them above three Years, during which Time her Son died of a Fever; and that they treated her not like a Scab, but as one of themſelves, on Account of the Injury done her by their Brethren; till ſome Occaſion calling a Body of them to the Frontiers of the *Portugueſe* Settlements; ſhe begged ſhe might attend them, and be ſuffered to go to her People again, which they readily conſenting to, ſhe once more got amongſt Chriſtians; from whence, in about two Months Time, ſhe procured a Conveyance to *Parnambuco*. Here, ſhe ſaid, ſhe firſt heard of my Embarkation for

Lisbon, and from that Time laid out for a Paſſage to me, and at laſt, ſays ſhe, happily found you, at a Time I was capable of ſerving you.

I then told her by what Means I had eſcaped Death, and how I was relieved by Don *Henriques*, with his Death, and my Troubles ſince; and, ſays I, having met with ſo great Afflictions at *Lisbon*, I am reſolved to leave it forthwith, and to ſeek my native Shore with all Expedition; for I have never had one comfortable Moment here, till I moſt providentially ſaw you this Morning.

I then introduced *Guardia* to her, as the Preſerver of my Life, and a Perſon with whom I was reſolved never more to part. We ſtayed but for my ſettling ſome few Things at *Lisbon*, for I never once ſought after my Charges, leſt I ſhould involve myſelf in ſome new Difficulties, and then prepared for our Voyage to *England*, putting ourſelves and Effects on Board the firſt good Ship that departed thither.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Arrive at Briſtol. *Go to the Duke of* C——n's. *Are entertained in the Duke's Palace by the Houſe-Keeper. Diſcovered by* Carter, *the Duke's Steward. Their Greeting. The Author is received as Miſtreſs of the Family.* Carter *declares his Orders to furniſh her with whatever ſhe wants. Diſcourſe between her and* Carter. Carter's *Vigilance. Of the Houſekeeper.*

WE landed at *Briſtol*, where we ſtayed about fourteen Days, to get our Goods on Shore, and place them in ſafe Hands, and dreſs ourſelves in the *Engliſh* Manner; which having done, we croſſed the Country into *Derbyſhire*, in purſuit of my Father, who, from our Enquiries upon the Road, we collected to be now Duke of *C——n*. We arrived at his Seat, through as wild a Country as we had ever ſeen in our Travels, and which reminded us of ſome Part of our March from the Fort, Inland, amongſt the *Indians*; but were ſurprizingly daſhed in our Expectations, at the News of his being ſet out, but ten Days before for *America*.

We desired we might be received into the Family that Night, and lodged, it being too late to think of going further; and telling the Housekeeper, that, if her Lord had been at Home, I was very sure he would have given me a gracious Reception, (for it was not to my present Purpose to discover myself): She, after some little Scruple, said, she would endeavour to accommodate us, as well as she could, though we must not expect other than the bettermost of the Servants Rooms, all the rest of the House being locked up till her Lord's Return.

We complimented her upon the Offer of that, and were very glad we had fixed our Tent so well for that Night, for it was almost dark. She gave us each a Glass of Wine, and said, we should have some little Thing for Supper, and took us into her own Room; here we came, by Degrees, a little more familiar, and mentioning our coming from *Bristol*, having been several Years beyond Sea, she asked a great many Questions of foreign Parts, and seemed highly pleased with the Accounts we gave her.

As we were in the Height of our Discourse, before Supper, in came an elderly good-looking old Gentleman, with an Head as white as Snow, who seeing us, and taking us for some Acquaintance of the House-keeper's, immediately

ately retired again; but the Houſekeeper aſking us, if his Company would be diſagreeable (for ſhe ſaid, he was a moſt worthy Man, and had been in the Family above fifty Years, and one whom her Lord put the greateſt Confidence in) and we both declaring ſo far from it, that it would be very pleaſing to us, ſhe called him back again.

The old Gentleman made us his Compliments, hoping we would excuſe him, if he ſat with us a little, for his Lord being from Home, and the Family diſperſed, he and Mrs. *Williams*, which was the Name of the Houſekeeper, uſually ſpent their Evenings together.

We then entred into Diſcourſe with the old Gentleman, and were mightily pleaſed with his Converſation, till Mrs. *Williams* ſtarting ſome further Queſtions upon foreign Affairs, and mentioning the *Brazils*, which we had before told her we came from; the old Gentleman catched at that Word, and aſked, whether we came from thence? We told him, yes. Why, ſays he, my Lord is gone near to it, he is gone to *Jamaica*. But pray, Madam, ſays he, how long have you been come from thnce? I told him five Years; but I had been at *Lisbon* ſince my Spouſe died: And was you long in the *Brazils*, ſays he? I told him, I had been there twice, but it was about fifteen Years ſince I went thither the laſt Time. Have you been in

any other foreign Parts, ſays he? I told him, at the *Madieras*, on the Coaſt of *Africa*; and in *Italy*, at *Leghorn* and *Florence*. You have been a great Traveller, indeed, ſays he, a great Traveller: If I am not impertinent, ſays he, pray, may I crave your Name? Sir, ſays I, though I am an *Engliſh* Woman, having been married to a *Portugueſe* Gentleman, my Name ſounds but oddly in *Engliſh*, it is Donna *Paboia*. I crave your Pardon, Madam, ſays he, and looking a little confounded, he roſe, and went out of the Room.

Mrs. *Powell* and I had received great Satisfaction, from our Converſe with the old Gentleman, and were ſaying ſo much to the Houſekeeper, when a Maid came to tell her, that Mr. *Carter* (for that was the old Gentleman's Name) would ſpeak with her; ſo ſhe took her Leave of us, ſaying, ſhe would wait of us again immediately; but not ſeeing her in full Half an Hour, we began to be uneaſy, ſuppoſing that, as the Duke was from Home, and moſt of the Servants, we underſtood, upon Leave of Abſence, we ſhould put them to ſome great Inconvenience in lodging us.

When the Houſekeeper came in, ſhe made many Compliments, more than could have been expected for her Abſence; and avoiding her Seat ſhe was before ſitting in, choſe one near the Door. We told her, how concerned

we

we had been in her Abſence, leſt we ſhould give her ſome peculiar Trouble, underſtanding that ſhe had but little Aſſiſtance then with her; aſſuring her, that nothing but the Impoſſibility of procuring other Accommodation, within a reaſonable Diſtance, ſhould have prevailed with us to intrude upon her at ſuch an unſeaſonable Time.

As ſhe was about to reply, in came the old Gentleman again, with a little Pocket-Book in his Hand, and his Spectacles on: Madam, ſays he to me, may I crave the Favour of your Name once more? I thought ſome Peculiarity in the old Man, had prompted him to take down all Names of the Perſons that came to the Houſe; ſo I repeated it again: *Pa*, how then ſays he? *b. o. i. a.* ſays I, Letter by Letter: The very ſame, ſays he, to a Tittle; then taking me by the Hand, excuſe me, Madam, ſays he, if I look on your Fingers. That immediately gave me a Suſpicion of what he was at: O Sir, ſays I, you are looking, I perceive, for what you will not find: No, ſays I, that has been loſt, ſince it became leſs uſeful to me than heretofore, at a Time when I was plundered by the *Indians*, and taken a Captive. I am ſatisfied, ſays I, you are looking for a Ring I once had, and which your Lord has ſeen. I am, indeed, Madam, ſays he, I am, indeed. I then gave him a Deſcription of it, and that it tallied with one his Lord uſed

to

to wear: Ay, and ever will, to his dying Day, ſays he. O Madam, though I am an old Man, let me ſalute you; it gives Life to my Blood, to think I have in my Keeping that Treaſure my poor Lord is now in Search of. O that he knew it! What Tranſports would ſeize him! He would not ſleep till he had embraced you.—O the unfortunate Hour that he ſet out in!—But, ſays he, it is poſſible ſomewhat may have detained him in *London*, and he may not yet be ſailed, I will this Night diſpatch a Meſſenger after him, though I am afraid it is too late.

The old Gentleman having me all the while by the Hand, at length deſired me and my Company to walk into the Parlour; where, when we came, we found every Thing in the moſt exact Order for our Reception. Mrs. Houſekeeper would no more ſit before me, but all the Word was, how may I beſt ſerve your Ladyſhip? Though I would willingly have abated all their Compliments, for a Sight but of my dear Father, who was now ſo much the dearer to me, by how much I was the more confirmed in his Love and Tenderneſs for me.

The Houſekeeper prepared an elegant Supper, and the three beſt Beds for us; but I told her we ſhould uſe but two; for that I would take my Son to me, and my Daughter would lie with Mrs. *Powell*.

The next Day Mrs. *Powell* and I had nothing to do, but conſider how to ſpend our Time the moſt agreeably; and, but for my Father's Abſence, and the Fear of loſing him in the Voyage, I had been compleatly happy. All that I was now impatient for, was ſome further Diſcourſe with Mr. *Carter*, who, when we were dreſſed for Dinner, and were come into the Parlour, entred the Room, and preſented me with a Bank-note for five Hundred Pounds. I took it from him, and looking upon it, deſired to know what I was to do with it, and what it was for? *Carter*, with an honeſt Smile, told me, it was a Bank-note for five Hundred Pounds. Pray, ſays I, what do you call a Bank-note? He then explaining the Meaning of it to me, (for it was the firſt I had ever ſeen in my Life) he ſaid, that having unlimited Orders to ſupply me, if I ſhould come, with all I wanted, he did not know how I might be furniſhed, and thought it but his Duty to preſent me with that, as an Introduction to his general Orders.

I told him, I thanked him, and would receive it of him, though I was in no Want, for I told him I had very large Effects at *Briſtol* where I landed; but as it might be ſometime before I could get them tranſmitted to me, the Note might be poſſibly uſeful.

He

He then told me how long he had lived in his Lord's Family; that he had procured himſelf a very pretty Eſtate in it, and how many Dukes he had buried out of it; and in ſhort, the whole Hiſtory of it, from Generation to Generation, down to my Father, who he hoped, he ſaid, would bury him. He told me privately, that his Lord had revealed to him the Hiſtory of my Birth; and, ſays he, I well knew your Ladyſhip's Mother, when ſhe was the prettieſt Woman in *England*.

He told me, he was perſuaded his Lord would never marry, and then, Madam, ſays he, here is a noble Eſtate for your Ladyſhip: For me, ſays I? Every Stick and Stone of it, ſays he; his Grace has left his Will in my Hands, wherein he has given you all: Thirty-two Thouſand Pounds a Year, and a vaſt deal of Money; for ever ſince his Grace has been in Poſſeſſion, which is above fourteen Years, I have laid up Fifteen Thouſand Pounds a Year for him, and ſome Years above Twenty. Madam, ſays he, his Expences have been but a Trifle; but I hope, if he lives to ſee you here, and his Grand-Children, we ſhall have as great Doings again, as were in your Grand-Father's Days, when all the Country, nay, all *England* rung of it.

He ſaid, he believed it would be a great Affliction to his Lord, to hear of the Death of my

my Huſband, for his Grace always mentioned him with the higheſt Eſteem: He liked him, he ſaid, the firſt Moment he ſaw him. So then, ſays I, he has told you of his Meeting me at *Florence*. Ay, that he has, replied he, and would tell it again, and again, and weep over it; how he firſt ſpied the Ring, and then you, and the Letter, and the Preſent he made you of the Ten Thouſand Dollars I ſent him. In ſhort, he was eaſy only when we were talking of you, as he would be almoſt every Evening, when he was without Company; for getting me in, and making me ſit and ſmoak my Pipe with him, he then ſaid, he thought himſelf tranſacting his paſt pleaſing Scenes over again.

I could have ſat all Day to have heard *Carter*'s Diſcourſe, had not Dinner interrupted us; but I made all the Opportunities I could daily of converſing with him: The very next Morning after I arrived, he diſpatched Meſſengers for what Servants were needful, to return to their Poſts, ordered ten Coach-Horſes to be taken from Graſs, had a Coach and Chariot cleaned up; and, in ſhort, when I came to be a little more familiar, and to claim a little Authority in the Family, there was nothing I could think of enquiring for, but it had been ready prepared for my Accommodation.

Mrs.

Mrs. *Williams*, I ſoon diſcovered, had been a Clergyman's Widow in the Neighbourhood, and had an only Daughter, who lived with a Relation at a little Diſtance; ſo, in order to give the Mother what Pleaſure I could, I deſired the Child might be brought to play with *Charly*, (that being my Daughter's Name) and after they had ſpent ſome Days together, perceiving that her Mother was very fond of her, and believing it would be an Obligation to her to have the Child under her own Eye, I told her, if ſhe pleaſed, I would take her Daughter altogether, to be *Charly*'s Companion; and by this Act, I gained the Mother's Heart for ever.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

The Author's Reception in the Neighbourhood. She remembers Saunders's *Family. Projects a Journey to see them. The Condition of the Family. Hears that her former Lover* David Kenton *had married one of* Saunders's *Daughters. Hears of his Misfortunes. Gives them a handsome Benevolence. Her Reflections on human Life. Her Dream. Arrives at* London, *and Returns. Sends* Carter *to settle* Saunders's *Family in a Way of Life. He takes* David *a Farm. Receives further Orders. Settles another Daughter in an Inn.*

THE Report of the Duke's Daughter being arrived, soon drew the Neighbouring Quality to visit me; and they observing how agreeably I received them, introduced me by degrees to the Acquaintance of all the Gentry in those Parts; so that, (except for the Return of my Father,) I had not a Wish left ungratified. I then enquired for, and retained proper Masters in the Family, for the Education of my Children; for they were so dear to me, that I could not bear them out of my Sight.

Having thus regulated my domestick Affairs, it came into my Head, what my dying Mother had recommended to me, relating to old *Saun-*

ders;

ders; but whether he was living or not, I could not tell; however, I was determined to enquire; ſo having received all my Effects from *Briſtol*, I propoſed to Mrs. *Powell*, to take a little Journey about *England* to divert us, till I ſhould hear of my Father; but did not let her into the real View I had in it. We fixed our firſt Rout to *Northampton*, we paſſed through *Leiceſterſhire*, and ſtayed at *Northampton* ſome Days: Then telling Mrs. *Powell*, I had never in my Life ſeen *London*, we fixed our next Rout thither. In our Way I had a Mind to ſee *Bedford* I told her; for I had, wherever I baited, enquired privately what great Towns were between us and *Luton*, and directed my Coachman through them. We lay at *Bedford*, and the next Day, I told him we would Breakfaſt at the firſt Inn at *Luton*; he ſtopped accordingly, when having diſpoſed of Mrs. *Powell* and my Children within Doors, I took my Opportunity to leave them, whilſt I ſtepped to *Saunders*'s Houſe, which was one of the Firſt at the Entrance of the Town. I felt an exceeding Satisfaction all the Way I went, at Sight of the Scene of my youthful Amuſements, and frequently thought I ſaw Faces that I knew; but could recollect no Names to apply to them.

I remembered *Saunders*'s Houſe again, and when I came thither, and had rapped with my Fan at the Door, a good Motherly Woman coming

coming out, I enquired if Mr. *Saunders* was living; ſhe told me, yes; I enquired after his Health; when ſhe ſaid he was but indifferent, for that he had received a Fall ſome few Years before, which had rendered him incapable of following his Buſineſs. I deſired to ſee him, ſhe ſaid he was got into the Alms-houſes; pray ſays I, are any of his Children living? Yes replied ſhe, they are all living; but there is only me at *Luton*. I then aſking her Name, ſhe ſaid, *Betty*. Reflections on paſt Scenes, upon the Sight of my old Play-fellow, recurring to my Mind, I could not refrain from Tears, and deſired I might have Liberty to ſit down.

The Room was full of ſmall Children, one in the Cradle; another hanging by a String in the Middle of the Room; two more half naked playing on the Bricks in the Chimney Corner; a Fifth, that could juſt run about, dragging a Kitten by the Neck; and two more, which were the Eldeſt, and Girls, were mixing and kneeding Dough for Baking. I then putting my Hand in my Pocket, and pulling out a Handful of Silver, diſtributed it amongſt all the Children. The poor Woman, looking all the while as if ſhe had ſeen a Ghoſt, and wondering what all this meant. I ſaw ſhe was very big with Child, ſo told her, I ſuppoſed ſhe had a Huſband; ſhe ſaid yes, and pray, ſays I, where is he? She told me, he was out at Day Labour. I then aſk-

ed

ed his Name, which ſhe replying to be *David Kenton*, I verily thought I ſhould have fallen from my Seat, it being the Name of the Farmer's Son, my late Spark; but recovering myſelf a little, ſays I, there was, I remember, ſome Years ago, one of that Name in this Neighbourhood, a ſubſtantial Farmer. My Huſband, ſays ſhe, is his Son: His Father came to Misfortunes, and he was forced to Work Day Labour, for his Bread. Pray, ſays I, what Accidents befel his Father? O, ſays ſhe, he loſt all his Cattle by a Sickneſs, and having laid up two Years Corn, in Hopes of making a Profit, to have helped out for the Loſs of his Cattle; a Fire happening, burnt his Barns, and ruined him. I did not care to make myſelf perſonally known to them, leſt by ſome Means or other it might induce ſome Reflection upon my Father; but I gave her a Note for fifty Pounds, ordering her, to take her Father Home to her immediately, and to cloath her Children, and herſelf, for ſhe was quite in Rags: I alſo gave her Directions to let her Huſband look out for ſome Employment, ſome Farm, or Shop, or whatever elſe might be moſt likely to ſucceed; and that I would ſend ſoon to ſee what they could propoſe to do; and if I approved of it, they ſhould receive ſufficient to carry it on.

The poor Woman almoſt fell in Fits, ſhe threw herſelf at my Feet, begged to know whom ſhe

ſhe might thank for it, and uſed ſuch extravagant Teſtimonies of her Gratitude, as ſet all the young Children a Crying ready to break their Hearts; inſomuch, that I was too affected with the Sight, to bear it any longer, and was obliged to take my Leave, going a back-way to my Inn, that they might not watch me.

At my Return, Mrs. *Powell* aſked me where I could have been, for ſhe and the Children had ſought me every where, to no purpoſe, till ſhe grew quite uneaſy for me; I told her, I had ſtrolled out Backwards, to take a little Walk, and had inſenſibly drawn myſelf further than I intended, before I recollected myſelf, and ſo it went off: But the affecting Scene I had been preſent at, went not ſo readily off my Mind: I was very thoughtful all the remaining Part of the Day; of which Mrs. *Powell* took great Notice, and frequently aſked me what was the Matter, and why I was ſo dull? very much preſſing me to tell her the Occaſion; but I ſtill put it off, with attributing it to her Fancy.

We lay at *Barnet* that Night, and being in my Bedchamber by myſelf, I had Liberty to indulge my Reflections, with greater Latitude than I could while in her Company; I went to Bed, but could get no Reſt. What, ſays I, ſhall we ſay to the Methods of Providence? I have this Day beheld a Family diſtreſſed, which heretofore were, in their Way, flouriſhing under the

Supply

Supply of an honeſt Induſtry; here is poor *David* too, (to whom I had certainly been married, had I not been forcibly taken from him,) now reduced from what I expected he would have been, to a Labourer: Now would my marrying him have bettered his Condition? No, it might have fixed mine, to the deplorable State of his preſent Wife; for under ſo mean an Alliance, my Father might not have choſe to look upon me; and then, I, who am now capable of making them happy, had been myſelf the miſerable Object I have relieved. Lord! ſays I, how mighty are thy Works? The Diſtreſs I ſuffered, in Cuſtody of the Laird *C—r—k*, the Hardſhips I ſuſtained on the Rock, the Terrors of my Mind on Board the Ship, with one only vile Companion, the Deſpair I was in with the Rover, and the Miſeries of my Captivity, have had an End; and whether were greater, the Sufferings of thoſe Actions, or the pleaſing Reflections I have ſince had of them, is difficult to determine? But this I can ſay, the Sting of my Suffering is loſt; the pleaſing Reflections remain. Could I have catered therefore for myſelf, I had now been wretched as *Betty*; but under the Direction of Providence, I am perfectly bleſſed. Why therefore are Mankind ſo ignorant? as not abſolutely to rely on that Being, which alone can direct them for the beſt? Now, can it be ſaid, that Providence has not reduced this

this poor Family, for the very Purpoſe of ſhewing them Comfort through my Means? and alſo of gratifying my Satisfaction, in relieving them? Then ſhall I be backward in it? No, all I am poſſeſſed of is from Providence, and if I can bleſs Providence for my own Happineſs with Pleaſure, the more Voices I ſhall raiſe to the ſame Pitch of Praiſe, the more may I be ſaid to praiſe it myſelf; let this therefore be my conſtant Endeavour.

Full of theſe Reflections, I fell a-ſleep, and dreamed I was at a prodigious Aſſembly, amongſt an infinite Multitude of People, of all Ranks, Sorts and Conditions. Methought they all fell into Country Dancing, and myſelf was the only Spectator. I was very curious in my Obſervations of the Countenance and Apparel of the ſeveral Parties; but thought I ſtill ſaw the ſame Faces, with but little Variation in the Individuals; yet the Appearances that each made, as they from Time to Time paſſed by me, was ſurprizing. There was amongſt the reſt, a fine Sattin Gown, embroidered with Gold, which I moſt admired of any of them; the Lady who wore it had paſſed by me ſome Time, and I had expected her to return; but not coming, I was ſo curious to look about for her, when though I was ſure it was her by her Face and Gait, yet the Gold ſeemed to be quite worn out of her Gown, ſo that I could ſee none

of

of it left; but the Gown ſtill looked very ſpruce and clean without it; at the next Return ſhe made, I was ſurprized to ſee how dirty it was grown, and preſently ſhe looked ſo miſerably in an old tattered Garment, which ſeemed as if it had been white, that I did not know her; neither could I obſerve the ſame Beauty and Sprightlineſs in her Face, which had ſo charmed me before: As ſhe made ſeveral ſucceſſive Returns and Paſſes by me, I ſtill turned away my Head, from ſo diſagreeable an Object; till at laſt, I perceived ſhe had mended her Gown; and, upon a nearer Examination, I judged ſhe had cleaned it too, which engaging me to ſurvey her, with my former Pleaſure, I could plainly diſcover the Gold taking its Place in it again, till at Length it appeared more glittering than before. I was reſolved then to be aſcertained, whether it was really the ſame Perſon or no; when I met her with a Coronet on her Head. I begun to be afraid then of being too meddling, but ſtill I followed her, till a tall, pale, meager Spectre methought took her by the Hand, and led her out of the Room. The Oddity of this Sight awaked me, and filled my Head fuller of Conceits than it had been before, but it being then Morning, I aroſe, and they vaniſhed.

We this Morning reached *London*, but having no Houſe of my own there, that I then knew of, and it not being worth while to hire private Lodgings,

Lodgings, Mrs. *Powell* and I took up with the Accommodations of an Inn, in *Holborn*, for a Week; when having ſatisfied our Curioſity of *London*, we bent our Courſe Homewards again.

The Day after my Arrival, I informed old *Carter* what I had done. O my Lady, ſays he, what may I not promiſe myſelf under you? This was an Act worthy of yourſelf. I told him I was ſtill under a great Difficulty, not having made myſelf known to them, to think how they would behave, for want of ſome-body of Skill to direct their Choice in ſuch Manner, as that what I intended for their Benefit might really prove ſo; for, ſays I, Money, though it is a very neceſſary Ingredient in Life, yet it is the Judgment in applying it, that makes it turn out beneficially. It wasvery true, he ſaid, and if I would give him Leave, as he was as much a Stranger in that Country as myſelf, he would take upon him to go over, and give them the beſt Advice he could, what Undertaking to go upon; and if they had Thoughts of Farming, he believed his Opinion would be of no ſmall Service to them.

I thanked him for his Concern for them, and told him, he ſhould go whenever he would. He then deſired to know how far I intended to ſerve them; for upon that, he ſaid, his Advice muſt depend. I told him, I was not confined in my View, but any Thing within the Com-

paſs of five Hundred Pounds he might engage for; not being willing to do all that I might intend at firſt, for fear of a Miſcarriage; very right, ſays he, and that Sum, properly applied, will afford them a happy Subſiſtance.

Having taken my full Inſtructions, as to all I intended, and having Orders to inform himſelf of all the reſt of the Children, and in what Ways they ſeverally were placed, he took his Leave of me, purpoſing to return in ten Days.

I waited pretty patiently for him about fourteen Days, when hearing nothing of him, I began to fear, leſt ſome Accident had befallen him; but in a Poſt or two after, he ſent me Word, that the Family had all been ſo confounded at my Benevolence, that, willing to get into ſome better Way of Life, as they called it, they had taken a little Shop, which would ſcarce provide them with Bread, inſtead of maintaining ſo many Children. That he had reaſoned them out of that; and, upon diſcourſing *David* over, and finding him a ſenſible Man in the Farming Way, he had agreed with the Landlord, for a pretty eaſy Farm in the Neighbourhood, of a Hundred Pounds a Year, and had the Offer of all the Stock, at a reaſonable Rate, from the Tenant who was quitting it; and if I pleaſed, he would buy it, and fix *David* there. He ſent me Word that all the Boys were at Service in good Families, and lived well; that one of the

Girls

Girls, the youngeſt, was at Service; and that *Mary* had been married, but was a Widow, and kept an Alehouſe of but poor Buſineſs; that ſhe was a likely Woman, and deſerving of better Fate, but being behind-hand with her Brewer, he feared ſhe would not long ſtand it. He deſired my Orders to be left at the Poſt-houſe, directed as he wrote me.

I, by the next Poſt, approved of his Management, and gave him Commiſſion to put *David* into the Farm; charging him to keep the old Man free from all Sort of Labour, and to tell *David*, that he ſhould conſtantly receive Eighteen Pounds a Year for his Father's Board, and that the old Man ſhould receive Twelve for his Cloaths and Pocket. As for *Mary*, I gave *Carter* Commiſſion to pay her Brewer, and all other Debts ſhe might owe, and if he knew of any ſober proper Perſon, to make her an Huſband, he ſhould take an Inn for them, and I would furniſh it, and lay them in a Stock.

Upon his Receipt of this, he ſent me Word, that my Goodneſs to *David*, he believed, would anſwer my Expectations; that he had diſcharged *Mary* for Twenty-two Pounds, and that a very ſober Man, an Hoſtler to one of the largeſt Inns thereabouts, who was perfectly known to the Paſſengers of that Road, had courted her ſometime; but was fearful of her Demands falling on him, which had retarded the Marriage; and

that there was a very large Inn at *Dunſtable*, to be lett, which he hoped they would be able to manage very well; but they could not come into it under three hundred Pounds.

Well, I ordered him, in my Anſwer, to take the Inn, to get them married forthwith, and after having furniſhed it, and laid in a Stock of Liquors, Corn, Hay, &c. to give them what remained of five hundred Pounds; and likewiſe, if he thought *David* would manage well, to let him have what remained of his five hundred Pounds; all which he did, and in about two Months returned, overjoyed at having made ſo many People happy; which Acts of Humanity in the old Man, endeared him very much to me.

CHAP. XXIV.

Viſit Mrs. Powell's *Mother. Deſcription of her. Mrs.* Powell *addreſſes her. How ſhe diſcovered her to be her Daughter. Their Diſcourſe. Hears ſhe hath a large Fortune. She is diſcovered to her Brother and Siſter. Return to* Derbyſhire.

I Had now been upwards of twelve Months in *England*, but had heard no News of my Father as yet, which gave me prodigious Pain, for fear of any Accident befalling him; and Mrs.

Mrs. *Powell* often mentioning her Relations at *Burfield*, in *Shropſhire*, we agreed upon a Journey thither, to make Enquiry after them.

When we came into the Neighbourhood, we aſked if one Captain *Mallet* lived thereabouts? for that was Mrs. *Powell*'s Father's Name; we were informed, that the Captain had been dead many Years; but that he left a Son, Squire *Mallet*, they ſaid, who lived about three Miles further; we aſked if he left any other Children, and were told only one Daughter, for his eldeſt was dead long ago. Upon this Report we drove up to the Squire's Houſe, which was indeed a very handſome Seat, and well ſituated upon a fine Aſcent.

Upon Enquiry, we were informed he was gone a Hunting, but was expected back at Dinner. His Siſter, ſeeing we made a handſome Appearance, with a Coach and Six, and four Saddle Horſes, deſired we would pleaſe to walk in, and wait till her Brother returned; we complied with her Invitation, and ſhe entertained us with Chocolate. Mrs. *Powell* ſaid, ſhe knew Captain *Mallet* very well formerly, and deſired to know how long he had been dead? Miſs *Mallet* replied, that her Papa had been dead almoſt twenty Years; for ſhe did but juſt remember him. Mrs. *Powell* then enquired if his Lady was living? Miſs replied, yes, about ten Miles off. Mrs. *Powell* longing to know the

State of the Family, aſked if the Captain left any more Children, but herſelf and Brother? She ſaid, no. But perhaps, ſaid Mrs. *Powell*, he may have had more. Yes, ſaid Miſs, he had a Daughter, older than me, or my Brother, ſhe was his firſt Child. Is ſhe dead then, ſays Mrs. *Powell?* Truly Madam, ſays Miſs, I can ſcarce anſwer for that, it is before my Memory; but I remember to have heard ſhe was run away with, from a boarding School; but whether ſhe is living or dead, we never heard more of her: For which Reaſon, my Mamma never would ſuffer me to go to Boarding School at all. Indeed, ſays I, Miſs, I think ſhe had but very bad Encouragement.

Soon after, Miſs happening to go out of the Room for ſomewhat, ſays Mrs. *Powell*, I wiſh we had known of my Mother's being living, before we came in; I would much rather have made myſelf known to her; for I ſhall but be taken for an Impoſter here. Why, ſays I, let us make an Excuſe, that as our Time is ſhort, and Mrs. *Mallet* living, we will pay her a Viſit To-day, and wait upon your Brother To-morrow.

When Miſs came in again, Mrs. *Powell* told her, ſhe was mighty glad to find by her that her Mamma was living, for that indeed her Viſit was chiefly to her; and not knowing where ſhe lived, we called on Mr. *Mallet* for Information; that as he was not at Home, and Hunters Time uncertain,

uncertain, we would go to viſit Mrs. *Mallet*, and wait upon him, as we came back. Miſs very much preſſed us to ſtay, ſuppoſing her Brother knew us, but we begged pardon, ordered the Coach, and proceeded to Mrs. *Mallet's*.

We alighted at the Door, and went in, where we found a very fine elderly Lady, ſitting in her Parlour, who knew nothing of Mrs. *Powell*, any more than of me. Now, though we had concerted it ſo, as that Mrs. *Powell* ſhould not diſcover herſelf, till ſhe heard what her Mother thought of her; yet, upon Sight of her, ſhe fully recollecting her Mother, burſt out into Tears, and could not forbear running, and falling on her Knees before her, to beg her Bleſſing.

Pray, ſays the old Lady, Madam, who are you? For I can't recollect that I ever ſaw you before. I am your Daughter; your once dear *Biddy*, Madam. What? am I ſo altered, that my own Mother refuſes me? O Madam, ſays ſhe, no Time could have effaced the Remembrance of you from my Heart: I knew you was my Mother, the Moment I ſaw you. I had a Daughter, and a Daughter *Biddy* too, ſays the old Lady, and I pray Heaven it may be true that you are her; but I am not able to recollect your Face. You was but young when I ſaw you laſt, and Time makes great Alterations in young People; but, ſays the old Lady, that I may be out of all Doubt about it; if you are

my Daughter, you have a large Mole, at the Bottom of your Left Shoulder-bone, which was as big as a Silver Penny.

This put Mrs. *Powell* into great Confuſion, for ſhe knew of no ſuch Thing, nor had ever heard of it; and yet, that ſhe was her Daughter ſhe was ſure; but there was now no denying the old Lady that Satisfaction, ſo to ſtripping her we went, and as her Mother ſaid, there we found it.

The old Lady, upon Sight of it, clapped her Mouth to it, and kiſſed it heartily; O my dear Child, ſays ſhe, for now I know, and acknowledge you for ſuch, where in all the World can you have been, that you ſhould never ſend to inform us that you was living; when you was ſenſible, how dear you always were to your Father and me? He, poor Man, never looked up after your Misfortune, but languiſhed a Year or two, and died, within three Months, after he became Maſter of your Uncle's Eſtate: But let me, now I have the Satisfaction of ſeeing you, be fully let into the Knowledge of all that has befallen you, and where, and with whom you have been, and whether you are married, or ſingle ſtill, let me know all, hide nothing from me, my dear Child.

Alas, Madam, ſays Mrs. *Powell*, you have already aſked more Queſtions than I can fully Anſwer in a Week; but in general I have been over

over Half the known World, and in ſome Parts of the Unknown, and, with infinite Chance againſt it, am, by Providence, once more delivered into your Hands. I will by Degrees unfold my whole Hiſtory to you; but Madam, pray let me know, whether my Father was ſo good to remember me at his Death; for at preſent I am beholden to her Ladyſhip, (looking at me) for my Subſiſtance. Her Mother then courtiſing, and looking at me, ſaid, ſhe was very much obliged to me; but ſhe would take care to releaſe me of my Burthen. I told her, I hoped ſhe would not believe all that her Daughter ſaid to be true; for that ſo far from being a Burthen to me, that ſhe had been one of the greateſt Comforts of my Life, and that I owed her more than I ſhould ever be able to repay her.

Thus having complimented for ſome Time, Daughter, ſays ſhe, your Father hath reſerved for you, in your Brother's Hands, ſix Thouſand Pounds, to be paid to yourſelf if alive, if not, to any Children you might have; in caſe we ſhould ever hear of you again. She then told her Mother, we had been at her Brother's, but were very glad we had ſeen her before him; as ſhe muſt have been at ſo great a Loſs, to have made herſelf known to him.

We lay at Mrs. *Mallet*'s that Night, and, in the Morning, deſired the Squire's and Miſs *Mallet*'s Company to Dinner at their Mother's. When

they were come, and ſeated, Mr. *Mallet* made his Apologies to us, for not being at Home, and was ſorry we would not ſtay Dinner. His Mother then told him, he muſt now ſhow his Skill, for in one of us two Ladies, he would find his Siſter *Biddy*, he had ſo often heard of. This exceedingly raiſed the Curioſity of Miſs *Mallet*, and ſhe would gueſs firſt; ſo having ſurveyed us, (we being both ſo near of an Age, there was no forming a Gueſs from that) at laſt ſhe pitched upon me; but Mrs. *Mallet* would not ſatisfy her, till her Son alſo had gueſſed; who ſeeing me, as I muſt needs ſay I was, rather the fineſt Woman, not only in Perſon, but in Apparel, he alſo joined in with his Siſter's Choice; then Mrs. *Mallet* deſired them to ſalute me as ſuch, which they did, and I them. We then ſitting down to Dinner, I was drank to as their Siſter; and Mrs. *Powell*, to carry on the Joke, drank to me, as young Mrs. *Mallet*; but falling into an Argument, upon ſome of our Adventures; in the Warmth of our Diſcourſe, Mrs. *Powell* mentioning my Ladyſhip; here is ſome further Miſtery than we are yet appriſed of, ſays young *Mallet*; for you never told us my Siſter was a Lady before; we ſeemed to laugh it off, but he would not be ſo content, for either his Siſter was a Lady, and then ſhe muſt be married, or ſhe was Mrs. *Mallet*, and ſingle, ſo could not be my Lady. After ſome Debates on this Subject,

Mrs.

Mrs. *Powell* aroſe, and taking her Brother round the Neck, lovingly kiſſed him, and then did the ſame to her Siſter; and, to a By-ſtander, it would then have appeared as plainly which of us was the true Siſter, as *Solomon*'s Stratagem diſcovered the true Mother of the living Child; Nature working ſo in each of them, that they could not refrain from Tears.

We having ſpent the Evening in divers Diſcourſes, on Sketches of our Affairs, the next Morning, after Breakfaſt, was appointed to give our Hiſtories a full Hearing; which, having finiſhed, they looked upon us both as a ſort of Prodigies; and we had enough to do, for the whole Week we ſtayed there, to anſwer Queries, by way of further Illuſtration of the Premiſes we had before advanced.

At our Departure Mr. *Mallet* told his Siſter he would forthwith ſettle her Account, and be chargeable with her Fortune, and all the Intereſt due upon it, in whatever Manner ſhe would pleaſe to demand it; ſo having taken our Leave, we returned, highly pleaſed with our Expedition.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXV.

The Author's Concern for her Father's Abſence. Hears Saunders's *are in a thriving Way, with what ſhe had done for them. A Match propoſed between Lord* D——r, *and her Daughter* Charly. *Mrs.* Powell *married to Mr.* Graham. *Hear from the Duke at* Liſbon. *The Author ſets out to ſee him.*

IT was now towards the End of my ſecond Year that I had been in *England*, and hearing nothing as yet of my Father, though I was well aſſured of the ample Proviſion he had made for me; my concern for his Perſon, leſt any Accident ſhould have befallen him on my Account, (his Voyage being undertaken for my Sake) gave me infinite Diſquiet; however, I ſtill hoped the beſt; and now, I ſent old *Carter* once more, to look after my two Families of the *Saunders*'s, and to pay for the old Man's Board. He brought me a very pleaſing Account of the Succeſs of my Endeavours; for that *David*, and the Hoſtler, both proved incomparable Huſbands, and were in a fine thriving Way; but withall, that old *Saunders* was dead. I aſked him, if he perceived any Thing yet wanting to either of them, which would be beneficial? but he

he replied, he was of Opinion, any additional Bounty would rather be of diſſervice to them; for that, by their own Induſtry, they had it now in their Power to flouriſh in their Callings; but if by any caſual Increaſe of their Fortune, I ſhould dull the Edge of that Induſtry, the natural Conſequence would be a Decay in their Subſtance; ſo that he believed, I would ſee no Reaſon to do more for them, unleſs by ſome unfortunate Accident, their Conditions ſhould require it; which made me very eaſy as to them.

It was about this Time that a Match was propoſed for my Daughter *Charly*, now in her ſeventeenth Year, by the Earl of *B——n*, for Lord *D——r* his eldeſt Son; but though I of all Things eſteemed the Alliance, yet I would by no Means proceed in the Affair till the Duke returned; however, both the Earl, and his Son, continued viſiting me, and my Daughter, as uſual.

About this Time alſo it was, that a Widower in our Neighbourhood, a Gentleman of a plentiful Fortune, having a Son and Daughter at Man's Eſtate, both provided for, himſelf about Fifty, made his Addreſſes to Mrs. *Powell*; ſhe had no manner of Reaſon to diſlike the Match, as ſhe herſelf was above Forty; for my Part, I encouraged it all I could, though I ſhould thereby be deprived of her Company, which, in my Father's Abſence, was of peculiar

Service

Service to me. It proceeded, and a Day was appointed for Conſummation; we then ſent over for her Brother and Siſter to my Houſe, and alſo Mrs. *Mallet* herſelf, if ſhe choſe to travel; but ſhe, not caring for the Fatigue of it, the Brother and Siſter only came, and Mrs. *Powell* was married to Mr. *Graham*, (for that was the Gentleman's Name) by my Father's Chaplain, and had a Settlement of ſeven Hundred a Year Jointure. The new married Couple ſtayed at my Houſe with her Brother and Siſter about a Month, and then Mr. *Graham* took his Lady Home, and Mr. *Mallet* and his Siſter returned.

Very ſoon after this Wedding, *Carter* received a Letter from my Father from *Liſbon*, ordering a Remittance of ſome Money, to defray ſeveral Expences he had been at there, and which he did not chooſe to leave only Bills for the Payment of; and withal, to enquire whether he had ſeen any Thing of me? This Letter, *Carter* had no ſooner ſhewn me, but I came to a Reſolution to go to *Liſbon* myſelf, and bring my Father Home. I told *Carter* ſo, but he extreamly diſapproved it, expreſſing the Hazard and Danger of the Seas. I laughed at him, telling him, I was able to inſtruct him in thoſe Points, having been ſo great a Traveller; and as for the Sea itſelf, I was no Ways fearful of it, in a tight Ship; neither could I in Duty do leſs I told him, than to venture my Perſon, to meet a Father,

ther, who had ſo tenderly ſought me round the World, and expoſed himſelf for my ſake. I told *Carter* I would recommend my Son to his Care, till my Return, and my Daughter I would ſend to Mrs. *Graham*'s. Thus having ſettled the whole Oeconomy of my Family, to my own Mind, I took *Carter* with me to *Briſtol*, where I met a Ship, ready to ſail for *Oporto*, in two Days, I bargained to be carried up the *Tagus*; and, recommending my Affairs to *Carter*, I ſet Sail with two Maids and one Man Servant.

CHAP. XXVI.

Her Diſtreſs at Sea. The Author is Chaplain. Men encouraged. Save the Ship. Odd Temper of Sailors. The Leak grows worſe. The Ship runs aground. Loſe ſeveral Sailors. Ship beat almoſt to Pieces. Their miſerable Condition. Fall with a Part of the Ship into the Sea. Knows not what they ſwam on till Morning. See Land before them. Get to Land.

WE proceeded very pleaſantly, till we were off Cape *Fineſterre*, when a North-Eaſt Wind, that blew violently for ſeveral Days, drove us a long Way to the South-Weſt; but coming a little about, we began to recover ourſelves again; and had not ſailed far before the

the Mate came running into the Cabin, and told the Captain, the Ship had certainly ſtarted a Plank; for that the Water was got two Foot deep in the Hold, and was riſing: This was a melancholy Proſpect indeed; the Captain ran out with Tears in his Eyes, leaving myſelf, and one Maid I had with me, bewailing the Misfortune, we were not able to comprehend; but all our Belief was, the Ship muſt ſink. My other Maid and Man Servant, hearing ſuch a Confuſion, run to aſſiſt me. What ſhould they do for me, they ſaid? I told them we had no Choice, but to periſh together.

It was now too late to blame my own Raſhneſs, the Miſchief was done, and not eaſily to be remedied; we waited for the Sinking of the Ship, and, from the Cabin Windows, thought we ſaw her deſcend lower and lower. I had nothing now to do but ſubmit; we were but about four Leagues from the Shore, but might as well have been Fourſcore, for the Proſpect of ever reaching it; for our Boat, which was the only one on Board, had met with an Accident in the Storm, and no one durſt venture in it, under much more Repairs than we had Opportunity to give it.

I aſked the Captain, who was again with us lamenting his Condition, where we were? and whether it would be poſſible to ſave the Ship? He ſaid, we were upon the very worſt Shore in all

all *Barbary*; for if it was poſſible to be ſaved, which he could not ſay till the Carpenter came up, (who was gone to view the Leak, if he could find it,) yet we ſhould, beyond all Proſpect of Redemption, fall into the Hands of the *Barbarians*, who would make Slaves of us all; and that, if we were once ſent up Land, from the Shore, we muſt end our Days in Captivity.

The Captain had ſcarce ended his afflicting Tale, but the Carpenter returned; O Captain, ſays he, all is loſt: The Water is riſen to above five Foot in the Hold, and the Keel-Beam is ſplit, either at a Joint, or in the main Timber, for I can run a Handſpike through the Bottom of the Ship; neither is it poſſible for me to afford any Aſſiſtance, at five Feet Depth of Water.

The Captain, on hearing this, anſwered not a Word, but ſat with his Eyes fixed, entirely ſtupid; when the Crew, who moſt of them had followed the Carpenter to hear his Report, one and all cryed out, to Prayers, to Prayers, all Hands to Prayers, let the Captain pray: Then neglecting the Ship, all crowded into the Cabin, and about the Door. The Captain then kneeling down, as indeed we all did, began with, Lord have Mercy upon us, and ſave the Ship, and ſave our Lives; ſave us, ſave us, and ſend us aſhore, or we ſhall all go to the Bottom; ſave us, and help us, and ſave the Ship,

or

or ſhe will ſoon be loſt; and ſave our Lives, and ſave us, for we muſt be loſt elſe, and ſave the Ship.——And this was all he could ſay; the Men every now and then crying, ay, Amen, Amen. The Tears now running down the Captain's Face ſo faſt, that he could not well repeat over his Words any more, I took Courage; and, as I was then kneeling by him, ſupplied his Place of Chaplain, in the following Words: O Lord! Maker of Heaven and Earth, the Winds and the Sea; who ſuffereſt not thy Creatures, who truſt in thee, to cry in vain; we humbly beſeech thee to hear us, at preſent in great Peril; extend thy Power to ſave us; by thy Influence reſtrain this our Enemy, the Waters, from overflowing us; protect and direct this our floating Habitation to Shore; that we, thy Servants, may there extol thy great Mercy in our Deliverance; but if that is not thy Pleaſure, and thou haſt appointed us to periſh here, have Mercy on our Souls, for our Redeemer's Sake, *Amen.*

Having finiſhed my Prayer, the whole Crew cryed out, *Amen*, *Amen*; pray it again, pray it again, ſaid ſome of them: No, ſays the Carpenter, if we have been heard, we ſhall be ſaved; I'll down into the Hold again, follow me, Lads; I don't fear getting to the Bottom of it, though the Water ſhould be riſen another Foot; this Prayer has given me new Courage; come,

Boys

Boys, come, I don't fear to work even under Water, now; and if I die in the Attempt, I durſt ſay I ſhall go to Heaven; did not you hear her pray for our Souls? Ay, ay, ſaid they, get along, we'll all ſtand by you.

They had no ſooner left the Cabin, but we heard them at it in the Hold, knocking, and calling one to another, as briſkly as if nothing was the Matter; and, in about Half an Hour, we heard ſuch a Shout at the Bottom of the Ship, that the Captain, who ſtill ſat like an Ideot in the Cabin, cryed, Oh! we are all loſt, the Ship is ſplit. Why do you think ſo, Captain, ſays I? Did not you hear the poor Souls cry out, ſays he, at that very Inſtant? And they are, by this Time, buried in the Water: Oh! we have not long to ſurvive; I feel the Ship ſinking, but I will die in the Cabin.

My Maids, thinking the Captain muſt know to be ſure, how it went with us, broke out into Lamentations and Cries for their Diſtreſs; but I own, my own Mind was too much overwhelmed with the Thoughts of my poor Children, to have any Senſe of Crying: So I very compoſedly ſat, expecting the fatal Moment. In the Height of our Aſtoniſhment, I heard a great Buſtle upon Deck, and immediately the Sailors dancing and ſkipping run into the Cabin: We have ſtopt her, we have ſtopt her, ſaid they: What! ſays the Captain.—By this Time

Time the Carpenter being come; Maſter, ſays he, we ſhall bring her into Port yet; I have ript up a Bale of Goods, and plugged her ſo tight with them, that I don't believe ſhe will leak an Inch a Day.

This, you may be ſure, was joyful News; and all the Crew came about, and thanked me for ſaving the Ship; for they ſaid, till they heard my Prayer, they had not the leaſt Heart to ſtir; neither had they any Comprehenſion how they could be of Service: But, ſaid the Carpenter, your Prayer put me in Mind of a Bale of Broad Cloth to ſtop the Leak, and I went down to my Chin in Water, for I knew I ſhould not be drowned, after ſuch a Prayer as that; and finding the Leak with my bare Foot, I obſerved which Way it ran, and directing my Cloth accordingly, we have rammed her as ſound as ſhe was the firſt Day; and now we have nothing to do, but to ſet the Pumps going, to get a dry Ship again.

I told them, that I thought, ſince they all agreed that our Prayers had been ſo effectually heard, we ought, in Gratitude, to return Thanks for it. Ay, ſays the Carpenter, and ſo we will, Madam, as ſoon as ever the Hold is clear of Water; but let us pump her, let us pump her firſt. Poor Creatures, thinks I, how ſoon are your Affections weakened towards that very Power,

Power, from whom you cannot but acknowledge your Deliverance.

When we came to ſail, the Carpenter repreſenting to the Captain in what Part of the Ship the Breach was, he was afraid of putting up the main Sail, leſt any thing of a Wind ſwaying the main Maſt, ſhould force open the Leak again, which both the Mate and Captain held very reaſonable; ſo that we had only our Fore-Sails and a Jack to ſail with; and the Wind being directly in our Teeth, off Shore, we were, in ſpite of all our Efforts, driven to Sea many Leagues more Southweſtward; but the Wind coming about to South, we made all the Way we poſſibly could to gain Land again; at length, when we thought we had made Land, and puſhing with all our Canvas to come up to it, it being a very dark Night, we found ourſelves in the Morning, at Peep of Day, near the Iſland of *Palma*, and hoped to reach the *Madeira*; but the main Sail had, by this Time, ſo racked the Ship, that the Water now riſing faſter than in the firſt Leak, we were out of Hopes of a Remedy, but by running the Ship upon Shore; for which Reaſon, the Wind then ſetting fair, and not having above two Leagues Sail to *Palma*, we continued our main Sail, and drove, at a great Rate, upon a Shoal on one Side of the Iſland; here the Ship lay fixed, about a Quarter of a Mile from Shore, daſhing about, with

with her Stern to the Waves, and half full of Water. The Sea run then very high, and our greateſt Fear was, that ſhe would part, with the Violence of the Waves: We cut down her Maſts, which fell over Board; and, four of our Sailors, leaping upon the main Maſt, in Hopes of being carried to Shore, with the Waves, the Wind blowing to Land, we ſaw them periſh about a Furlong from the Ship, by a Wave which broke over them and covering the Maſt, beat them all off; though we ſoon ſaw the Maſt again, we ſaw the Men no more.

I was in ſome ſmall Hopes of Relief, whilſt Day-light continued; but, having loſt that, in the Blackneſs of a very dark Night, my Hopes vaniſhed too. In the Night, ſix more of our Hands, who were on Deck, got out the Boat, while the Captain, Mate, and I, with my Servants, and the reſt of the Crew, were in the Cabin; when the Mate hearing a Noiſe, and running to ſee what it was, perceived them juſt got into her, not a Boat's Length from the Ship. He called to them, begged them to return, told them their Danger, and every Thing he could think would detain them, but all to no Purpoſe; they ſaid they would venture, and not ſtay on Board till it was too late to help themſelves. There were three of them then ſcooping the Boat with their Hats, two a rowing, and one ſteering; for the Water ran in faſter than they

they could diſcharge it; and, in about twenty Minutes, we heard them cry out once or twice, and believe they were all drowned, for we heard no more of them.

The Return of Day again adminiſtred ſome further Hope; but by this Time there were two vaſt Seams in the Cabin, which, the Waves riſing higher than ordinary, frequently waſhed in at, and many of the Planks being ſtripped from the Ribbs of the Veſſel, ſhe was as full of Water, as to level with the Surface of the Sea, for the Water ran quite through her in ſome Places; then the Rudder broke off, but that was a uſeleſs Thing: The Captain, and all the Mariners who were left, quitted the Cabin as unſafe; at Sight of which, I and my Servants did the ſame; but getting out, the Deck lay as ſloping as if the Ship had almoſt ſtood upon her Head; and the Waves daſhed over us in ſuch a Manner, that, terrified with the melancholy Proſpect, and fearing we ſhould be waſhed away, I and my Servants retired into the Cabin again, where we were (at leaſt) leſs ſenſibly affected with a Sight of our Danger.

It was a miſerable Spectacle to behold us all crying, and wringing our Hands in the Cabin, while we heard the Captain and Men condoling their Fate on the Deck: And, every now and then, upon the Starting of a Plank, or Breaking of a main Timber, to hear them

them cry out for Mercy upon them, all was loſt, is a Scene by far too moving to be repreſented: But a few Hours after Dark, as my Servants and I were ſitting together in the Cabin Window, we heard a violent Cracking, as if all the main Timbers in the Ship had been broke in Pieces; and we in the Cabin, and in the Dark too, feeling ourſelves ſuddenly fall one upon another ſouſe into the Water, all ſet up a Cry together, every one clinging to the other, or to whatever happened to be neareſt. It was then ſo dark, and ſo thick a Fog had ariſen, after the Wind was laid, that we could not ſee each other, or know where we were, only by hearing our Cries, we each knew that ſome one, beſides themſelves, was ſtill living.

I ſat up to my Knees in Water, and when I could begin to recollect my Spirits a little, (for I thought at firſt falling the next Moment would have been my laſt) when, I ſay, I was a little recollected, I called *Betty*, and ſhe anſwering, *John*, ſays I; here, Madam, ſays he; who is this, ſays I, that I have hold of? Me, ſays *Hannah*: Thank Providence, ſays I, we are yet alive, and I think we ſeem to be moving: I have thought ſo ſome Time, ſays *John*: What have you hold of ſays I? The Cabin Window, ſays he, and *Betty* hangs round my Middle. Are you in the Water, ſays I? No, ſaid

ſaid he, I am dry. I am up to the Knees in Water, ſays I, and ſeem to ſit acroſs ſome Timber, and I am afraid to ſtir, leſt I ſhould fall. Dear Madam, ſays *John*, don't ſtir, for any Body moving, may turn us all over. So we ſat as ſtill as Mice, but began to diſcourſe a little freely, longing for Day, which was far more Hours diſtant than we could have wiſhed.

However, Day-light returned at laſt; but what we were upon, we could no ways gueſs at the firſt Glimmering of Light, nor indeed for a good while after; for we ſeemed to be in a longiſh ſquare Incloſure, ſurrounded with Piles, and boarded in, but very different from any Part of the Ship, that we could recollect, ſome of the Piles ſtanding far above the Incloſure of Boards, and ſome under it; at laſt, ſays *John*, I am ſitting upon the Ceiling of the Cabin. I think it is, ſays I, and have ſat with my Legs through this Hole all Night, when I might have kept them as dry as you, by only drawing them in to me.

As it grew lighter, we ſaw the Land juſt before us, and then we began to rejoice indeed. I told them, that it was high Time, jointly to return our Praiſes to our Deliverer, now we found ourſelves ſo near the Shore; which I did, and had not quite finiſhed, when our Wreck ſtriking Ground, we all ſtarted, in Expectation that our Hope had failed us; but paſſing on again

freely, I went on and finiſhed my Prayer: Then, collecting Courage from the Exerciſe we had been upon, we waited the Supreme Direction for conducting us to Land, which we reached in little more than a Quarter of an Hour.

Our Wreck not being able to get very near the Shore, *John* got off it into the Water, to about the Height of his Middle, wanting us to follow, as it was not fifty Yards to the dry Sands: I bad him firſt walk to them, to find whether it was a ſafe Bottom; which he having done, and returned, he told us, the Ground was as ſmooth as a Floor, and inſiſted on carrying me firſt on his Back through the Water, and then, he ſaid, he would fetch the two Maids; but they ſeeing him about Half-way with me, and dreading to be left a Moment by themſelves, jumped in after us, and followed on Foot through the Water.

We had now all got ſafely on Land again, when looking on the Wreck from the Shore, I ſaw plainly that we had ſat upon the Ceiling of the Cabin, and that, in its Fall into the Sea, it had turned Upſide down; this, if we had known at firſt, might have as eaſily ſaved the whole Crew, (being but ſeven of them) as ourſelves; for we never after ſaw the Ship more, or any of the poor Souls whom we left on Board.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVII.

John *viſits the Wreck. Gets ſeveral Things. Carry them from the Shore. Know not where they are. Eat heartily. Sleep in open Air.* John *ſent to ſearch the Country. Returns with a* Spaniard. *Are conducted to a Village. Examined, and ſent to* Palma. *Embark for* England. *Arrive at* Briſtol.

WHEN we were all ſafe, we could look back upon the Cabin with Pleaſure, and I told *John*, I would not for a hundred Pounds, if I had thought of it before we had came off, but have brought away ſome Piece of the Wreck, for a Relique to talk of hereafter, if ever we ſhould get to *England* again. Madam, ſays he, if your Ladyſhip has ſuch a Fancy for it, I will try for ſome portable Piece of the Painting, or Mouldings; never fear, I will get you ſomething. I would not have had him go, and told him, it was preſumptuous to court Danger again, when we had ſo miraculouſly eſcaped; but all that I could ſay would not prevent it, he would, and did go. When he was there, he tried to get off ſome of the painted carved Work that was round the Windows, but could

not; then looking upwards, he ſaw a Locker, that was by the Side of the Windows, with the Door downwards, and the Key in it; ſo he thought at leaſt to get the Key out, if he could get nothing elſe; and leaping up, where we had ſat, in taking out the Key, the Door came open, he having, as I ſuppoſe, unlocked it, and before he was aware, out dropped a Bottle; but having Preſence of Mind, to bear hard againſt the Door, he kept any more from falling; ſo, holding the Door tight with one Hand, he delivered the Locker of its Burthen, conſiſting of nine Bottles of excellent Brandy, and four of Rum; he called directly after taſting, and told us his Succeſs; then trying the other Lockers, (which, he ſoon found were to be opened with the ſame Key) he made himſelf Maſter of their Contents, which conſiſted of all the Captain's Linnen, ſome ſilk Waiſtcoats trimmed, ſome ſmall Pieces of Plate, ſome Knives and Forks, and a great Piece of pickled Pork ready dreſſed, with about an Hundred of fine Biſkets, beſides Wine, and more ſtrong Liquors.

In order to preſerve theſe Things, he bundled up all the Linen, and ſmall Things, as many as he could carry, in his Coat, tying it cloſe round with his Garters, and brought that on his Head, for the firſt Venture; then, in about four Turns more, he brought the Bottles, ten at a Time, and other Things. His Method with

with the Bottles was, to tie one to each End of his Garters, hanging them over each Shoulder, and taking three more in each Hand.

Myſelf and my Maids were, during this Time, walking about, and drying our Cloaths on the Shore, till all our Cargoe was landed; and then, each taking as much as we could carry, we pitched them a little Diſtance above the Water-Mark, and *John* returning once or twice more, we got all up ſafe. We then, upon *John*'s hearty Recommendation, took, each of us, a Sup of Brandy, and after ſome Time ſpent on the Shore, we went a little up into the Country, to ſee if we could ſpy any Habitations, or People, and how we might beſt accommodate ourſelves. The Ground roſe very ſteep from the Sea, and we took a long Walk to an Eminence; but (as the Country ſtill roſe above us) we could ſee no Buildings, or Inhabitants; and being able to diſcover a great Way round us, we thought we might reſt very ſecure from Moleſtation, till we had refreſhed ourſelves with ſome Food. We had brought up our Pork, ſome Biſket, and two Bottles of Mountain with us, but could not tell what we ſhould do for Water.

We eat very heartily of our Pork, having faſted for two Days before; and growing very dry with it, (though we had emptied one of our Bottles) I opened the ſecond, juſt to moiſten my Mouth; when pulling very hard at it, *John*

ſnatched it from me; would your Ladyſhip murder yourſelf, ſays he, it may throw you into a Fever? *John*, ſays I, you are to be commended for your Care of me, but you might have ſpared it at preſent, though I have enough: —This is Cyder, ſays I. *John* then begged my Pardon, telling me, he not doubting but it was Wine, thought I ſhould injure myſelf by it; ſo they each took a Sup, and were ſo kind, to leave me juſt another Reliſh; but we each of us declared, we could have ſeen the Bottom had there been twice as much.

We ſpent the Night on the Side of the Hill we were upon, ſleeping very ſoundly, though in ſuch rough Lodgings; and the next Morning, *John* having taken a large Round before we waked, at his Return, told us, he had ſeen a great Smoak behind ſome Trees, pointing to the Place. We did not know whether to rejoice, or be ſorry for it; but however, were reſolved to ſee who, or what we had got amongſt, if there were any Inhabitants, (for we did not then know where we were, or whether it was inhabited or not, or by whom;) ſo we ſent *John* towards the Place where he had ſeen the Smoak, with ſtrict Charge, that if he met any body, and they ſhould not be civilized People, that he ſhould, by no Means, mention us.

John, promiſing to obey our Orders, ſet forward; but not ſeeing, or hearing any Thing of him

him for four or five Hours, we began to think he had either loſt us, or met with Company we ſhould not chooſe to be acquainted with: But at laſt we eſpied him coming very nimbly towards us, and another Man with him. Our Hearts miſgave us, and we expected nothing leſs, than that he had betrayed us, and we ſhould be devoured; but, upon his nearer Approach, he told us, he had ſeen a great many Habitations, and that, having picked up a Man, whom he could not underſtand, he ſhewed him a Piece of Silver, if he would come with him to us. Blockhead, ſays I, if you don't underſtand him, how ſhould we? How do you know what he may be? He may murder us. *John* told me, he looked like one of us, and he believed he was a very honeſt Man.

Upon his coming up, he accoſted us in *Spaniſh*. O, thinks I, if you are thereabouts, I hope we ſhall do very well; ſo I anſwered him, in Part *Spaniſh*, Part *Portugueſe*; but their Affinity to each other, made them intelligible to us both, and we talked a conſiderable Time together, *John* and the Maids thinking me bewitched, I believe. I told him our Accident, and where we had laid our Cargoe. He ſaid, it was not worth while to bring our Wine or Brandy up with us; but for the other Things, if I would ſend the Man to help him, they

would bring them; and away he went towards them, I ordering *John* to follow him.

When the Wenches ſaw the Man going directly towards the Goods, and *John* following, and that I had given him no Directions, they were amazed to think what was to ſucceed; and aſked me, how it was poſſible that Man and I could underſtand one another, by ſuch odd Noiſes as we made? Why, ſays I, that is his Language. Language, ſays *Betty*, I am ſure there was nothing like a Word ſpoken by either of you all the while that Noiſe was making.

I could not but rejoice to find we were caſt upon a Chriſtian Shore, and thanked kind Providence for the Bleſſing; ſo, when the two Men returned, we followed them to the Town, though I think it will hardly bear that Name, it being but a Sort of a Village, and that a very ſcattering one; however, there was a ſmall Church, or Chapel in it.

I was carried before the Magiſtrate, or Headman of the Place, much like what we call the Headborough in *England*, who having examined us, and finding no Room to ſuſpect us of Falſity, ordered us Lodgings; telling us, he ſhould ſet out for the City of *Palma*, in a few Days, and would take us thither with him. We durſt not offer any Thing againſt this, though

though we were deſirous of getting thither ſooner, if we poſſibly could.

We were forced to walk all the Way, and made three Days Journey of it; but our Labour was very well recompenſed, by the Proſpect we had, of ſoon providing Shipping for our Tranſportation homeward; though it happening to be a Time of the Year when the Ships are moſtly outward bound, we ſtayed almoſt two Months before we could find one going directly for *England*; and having loſt all the Money, and Bills of Credit, I brought out for my Father, I thought it would loſe him many Months, and myſelf too, if I went to *Lisbon* firſt, from whence I muſt have been forced to ſend over to *England* again for Money; and perhaps he might be gone for *England*, when I ſhould come thither: So I reſolved to embark for *England* directly.

We were two Months in the Voyage, and I was obliged to ſell two very valuable Diamond Rings, and my repeating Watch, to ſubſiſt us at *Palma*, and pay beſt Part of our Freight; ſo that, when we arrived at *Briſtol*, we were ſo bare, that we had ſcarce ſufficient to bear our Charges Home.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The Author hears that the Duke is returned. Was gone to London. *Author inclined to go to him. Is prevented. Arrival of the Duke. Hath a Fit. Diſcourſe with the Author. Relates her Voyage to him.*

IMMEDIATELY upon my Arrival, I enquired for *Carter*, who, with great Joy in his Countenance, told me, my Father was returned, and was almoſt diſtracted to think I ſhould be loſt, or have come to ſome Misfortune. He ſaid, by the Time he thought I might get to *Lisbon*, he poſted away ſecond Bills to meet me there, for fear of an Accident; which falling into his Lord's Hands, enabled him to ſatisfy his Demands; and then waiting my Coming, for about two Months, and ſuſpecting I might be returned to *England*, he ſet Sail, and had a very quick Paſſage Home.

Carter told me, the Duke was ſo reſtleſs after his Return, without me, that he would go to *London*, to enquire after all the Shipping that arrived, in Hopes of hearing of me; and that he did not expect him Home, till he had found out what was become of me; but that he would ſend

ſend him a Meſſenger, Poſt, to inform him that I was arrived, which he did not doubt would bring him directly into the Country.

I was in twenty Minds, whether I ſhould not go myſelf, and if it would not ſeem more dutiful; for he told me, he had taken my Son *Harry* with him; but I would determine on nothing that Night, thinking to conſider it on my Pillow firſt. I did not tell *Carter* what I had Thoughts of doing, imagining it would be Time enough, after I had fully weighed it with myſelf; ſo *Carter* leaving me, I eat my Supper, and went to Bed, ordering my Maid to call me as ſoon as it was light.

My Maid being very punctual, I roſe accordingly; and having now come to a Reſolution of ſetting out to my Father, I ſent for *Carter*, and communicated it to him; but the old Man ſoon cauſed me to relinquiſh my Project, telling me, that he had diſpatched an Expreſs to his Grace the laſt Night, and then I was ſure my Father would be on his Journey before I could reach *London*.

I was juſt going to enter upon the Relation of my laſt Voyage to *Carter*, when he giving a great Sigh; Lord! Madam, ſays he, what a Happineſs is it, that you are arrived ſafe again, after the Dangers you have eſcaped ſince I ſaw you. Pray, Mr. *Carter*, ſays I, how came you to know I had been in any Dangers? For I'm ſure

ſure I mentioned nothing to you laſt Night of them. No, ſays he, but *John* did; for when I left you, I found him circled round by all the Servants, giving ſuch a diſmal Relation of your Travels, as made my very Heart bleed within me: So then, ſays I, *John* has deprived me of the Pleaſure I expected, from the Relation of it myſelf to you: But pray, ſays I, with what moving Circumſtances did *John* relate it, that ſhould cauſe you ſo much Uneaſineſs? Here old *Carter*, being a moſt exact Man, gave me the Relation of *John*, with twenty Remarks that had paſt unobſerved by me; but which, upon hearing them, I recollected had either happened, or might naturally enough be deducted from the Probability of Events; and aſſuring *Carter*, that *John* had illuſtrated the Story in a more peculiar Manner than I myſelf could, I begged him to be content with what he had heard, for that *John* had proved a very faithful Hiſtorian.

Having laid aſide all Thoughts of my *London* Journey, I ſet out after Dinner for my Friend *Graham*'s, intending to bring Home my Daughter *Charly*. I did ſo, and found Mrs. *Graham* as happy in her Marriage, as the beſt of Huſbands could make her: When they both preſſing it very much, I ſtayed a Day or two with them; and, having obtained their Promiſe of granting me the ſame Favour, at my Father's Return,

Return, we parted, and I brought Home *Charly* with me.

The Day Se'nnight of my Return from Mr. *Graham*'s, my Father arrived; I was then dreſſing for Dinner; he flew up into my Chamber, took me in his Arms: O *Patty*, ſays he, now I can die at Eaſe; this is the happieſt Moment I have ever enjoyed ſince I left you. He was quite overcome with the Delight he conceived; but of a ſudden, feeling his Hand fall from my Neck, as if involuntarily, I looked in his Face, and obſerving his Eyes languid, his Lips as pale as Death, and himſelf falling along, unable to ſtand, I ſcreamed out as loud as I could, and in ran my Woman, for ſhe had retired upon ſeeing my Father enter my Room. He had fallen againſt me, which puſhing me into a Chair that ſtood behind me, he then lay croſs my Knees.

I called to him, begged him to ſpeak, and wringing my Hands, verily believed him dead. My Cries brought all the Family about us, and *Carter* with the reſt; who ſeeing his Lord in this Condition, and having a readier Preſence of Mind than we, ſent for his Grace's Vallet (who always was uſed to bleed him) in order to breathe a Vein; but he being gone to a Farm of my Father's, upon a Meſſage, before he alighted from his Horſe, though he made all poſſible Speed back, upon Notice ſent him; yet

yet my Father having been put to Bed, and recovering a little before his Return, it was not thought adviſeable to bleed him then, and in about two Hours afterwards, he was quite recovered, and well again.

I never left the Bed-ſide all the while he was in it, till he determined to riſe; but ordering every one elſe to retire to the next Room, and wait within Call, I alone ſat by him.

After falling into a gentle Sleep for about an Hour, he awaked, quite refreſhed; and not directly ſeeing me, (the Curtains being drawn) he aſked who was there? I told him only me: Who, *Patty*, ſays he? For he always called me ſo: I told him yes, aſking him how he did? He ſaid, he was very well now; but my Dear, ſays he, my Expectations having dwelt upon you for my whole Journey, and having taken not one Mouth-full to Day, my Joy at the Sight of you overpowered me, and I perceived my Senſes very precipitately to deſert me; what enſued I can't tell, or how I came to Bed here.

I explained to him how he was, and what we had done to him: O Child, ſays he, no Man upon Earth has ever ſuffered ſo much as I have, through Fear of diſobliging my Parents; thy Mother was my Heart's ſole Darling; and had I married her, I had, in all human Probability, been a happy Man; and, though

though it ſoon became impoſſible, by her Union with *Saunders*, yet ſhe was never from my Thoughts, from that Day to this, ſave while I was with you, her ſecond ſelf, at *Florence* and *Leghorn*. I hope, now you are with me, I ſhall grow more chearful; but my Youth is gone, and it matters little what becomes of an old Man. *Patty*, ſays he, I muſt enjoin you never to leave me more, upon any Account whatever. I find by *Carter*, that your Huſband is dead, and I am ſorry for it, yet glad of it; ſorry for your Sake, glad for my own; ſorry you have loſt the Comfort of ſo deſerving a Huſband, and glad I have gained you by it; for had he lived, I fear I ſhould not have been now bleſt with you here, unleſs upon a Viſit or ſo: But, as I ſhall never ſhake thy Mother's Image from my Soul, having you with me, it will ever flouriſh there in you.

He then told me he would riſe, for he was very well again; but his ſincere Expreſſions of his Affections for me and my Mother, had ſo ſwelled my Eyes with weeping over him, that I was not fit, for a conſiderable Time, to call in the Servants to take him up; which he perceiving, took me by the Hand, and drawing my Face to his own; weep not, my Dear, ſays he, any more; I ſhall do well, and thou ſhalt never leave me, but enjoy all the Bleſſings this Earth

Earth can afford thee, and quit them at laſt but to thy own Children.

I retired while he aroſe, ſending in his Vallet to dreſs him: When he came down, after ſeveral paternal Tenderneſſes to me, he called for *Charly*, and embracing her, bad her be virtuous, and ſhe ſhould want for nothing: Then, with great Impatience, enquiring into my Voyage, he preſſed me to inform him of every particular Circumſtance of it. I began, with giving him the general Heads of it, but entred not too minutely into Particulars, leſt I ſhould overwhelm him with freſh Concern; but he, perceiving (by my abrupt Breaks, and ſome little Inconſiſtencies) there was ſomething more had happened than I had apprized him of, aſked me ſo many Queſtions about my not having been at *Lisbon*, when I ſet out with that only View; and in ſhort, ſo preſſed me, that thinking it was better the whole Truth ſhould come from myſelf, than that he ſhould hear it by any other Means at ſecond Hand, I opened every Circumſtance to him.

He ſat very attentively during the whole Narration, ſometimes ſhedding a Tear, then clearing up, then ſighing to himſelf again; and thus varying his Countenance, as the Relation affected him differently: At laſt, when I had brought myſelf Home to *Derbyſhire*; my Dear, ſays he, what have you not undergone for my Sake?

Sake? And, but that, if poſſible, it heightens my Affection for you, I ſhould be apt to chide you for this raſh Action, in venturing your precious Life, unneceſſarily, on my Account. I told him, I thought, that as he had teſtified ſo great a Diſregard for his own Safety, as to hazard himſelf in the Search of me, I ſhould have been very far deficient in my Duty, had I not as freely expoſed myſelf to the like Danger, for his Gratification in a Particular that would redound alſo ſo much to my own Satisfaction. Thus we ſpent ſeveral of the firſt Days after our Meeting, in little more than mutual Endearments to each other.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

Mentions Lord D——r's *Propoſal to the Duke. What paſſed between the Duke and the Author thereupon. What paſſed between him and* Charly *thereupon. The Duke invites Lord* D——r *and his Father to Dinner. In what Manner the Match was made up. The Duke's Generoſity. They are married. The Duke's Character. Marriage propoſed to the Author, but ſhe declines it.*

WHEN we were quite ſettled and compoſed, I took then an Opportunity of mentioning to him the Match, which in his Abſence had been propoſed by the Earl of *B—n*, of his Son the Lord *D——r*, but told him, I would by no Means ſuffer any Proceedings therein, till he arrived, and approved of it. He aſked me what I thought of it myſelf? I told him, he was much better acquainted with the Family than I was, and could form a far more extenſive Judgment of the young Lord's Character and Diſpoſition than myſelf, who only had ſeen his Perſon; for as to that only, I preſumed he required my Opinion; and, indeed, I told him, if his Reputation and Principles were as free from Blemiſh as that, I ſhould think him a thorough accompliſhed Gentleman: But then, what

what Eſtate the Earl had, or what he would ſettle upon him, in Caſe he married with his Approbation, I ſuppoſed would alſo be put into the Scale, and deliberately weighed, before any Approaches were made towards Matrimony.

My dear *Patty*, ſays the Duke, I am ſatisfied you are biaſed more by Faſhion than Judgment in what you ſay; and perhaps think it may pleaſe me, to find that no previous Requiſite hath eſcaped your Obſervation; but Child, ſays he, let us always, in treating of Matters for young People, think ourſelves ſo too, and only act with the beſt Underſtanding that can be attributed to thoſe Years: We muſt likewiſe endow ourſelves with youthful Paſſions, ſtill ſubject to the ſame Regulation; and now, let me ſee what you yourſelf, at *Charly*'s Age, with the beſt Underſtanding that Age is capable of, would do in this Matter, ſuppoſing no Bar in the Way, but a Matter of Settlement equivalent to your Fortune? for by the Way, I take it for granted, that had *Charly* not approved of my Lord *D——r*'s perſonal Qualifications, you would never have acquainted me with his Propoſals; Therefore, I ſay, what would you do?

I never was at a greater Nonplus in my Life, not in the leaſt expecting ſuch a Queſtion; but recollecting myſelf, Sir, ſays I, though perhaps my Inclination might over-balance me to a raſh Act, at her Years; yet, I ſhould think, that the Prudence

Prudence of a Parent, (though all other Circumſtances concurred) ſhould look circumſpectly towards an Equivalent.

The Duke laughed; *Patty*, ſays he, what had been your Mother's Fortune had I married her, as I certainly ſhould have done, if ſhe would have conſented? She indeed acted diſintereſtedly, in regard to the Prejudice ſhe ſuſpected it would do me with my Parents; but little thought, how far ſhe broke into the future Peace of my Mind; and though by her Refuſal, I am perhaps poſſeſſed of a much larger Eſtate than I ſhould have been, had I married her, I am by that Means bereaved of the Enjoyment of it; for had ſhe been my Wife, ſhe might poſſibly have been now living, and I might probably have had many Years of Felicity both with her and you; which till this Time, have been paſſed in the utmoſt Inquietude. As he was going on, *Charly* coming into the Room, he called her, and ſetting her on his Lap, my Dear, ſays he, your Mamma and I have been talking of you; ſhe tells me Lord *D——r* has been here in my Abſence; (*Charly* upon this bluſhed as red as Scarlet) and now, I want to know how you like him? Come, ſays he, you muſt be as free with me, as if you was alone with your Mamma. How do you like him? Dear Sir, ſays I, your Grace puts poor *Charly* to the Bluſh. She has no Reaſon for it, ſays he. I aſk you my Dear, whether

whether you ſhould like him for a Huſband, becauſe I hear he likes you? and I can give his Father no Anſwer, till I am ſatisfied whether you approve of him or not.——— He waited ſometime for her Anſwer; but ſhe was ſo confounded, ſhe could neither ſay yes, or no, till I put it to her. Said I, *Charly* you may ſpeak freely to your Grand Papa, my Dear; let us know one Way or other; but beſure ſpeak from your Heart, yes, or no.

At laſt, *Charly* brought it out, that ſhe ſhould like him, if her Grand Papa and I did. Can you ſay you love him ſays my Father? Yes, ſhe ſaid. Will you go upon a Meſſage from me to him this Afternoon, ſaid he? If he commanded her, ſhe muſt, ſhe ſaid. Or had you rather he ſhould come to you, ſays he? I had rather he came hither, if you pleaſe Sir, ſays ſhe. Then ſays he, I'll ſend for him, and you muſt tell him you will marry him, (here *Charly* bluſhed more than before) come, ſays my Father, if you love him, you will delight in his Company, and be glad to ſee him; and if I ſend for him, he quits my Houſe no more till you are his Wife. What ſay you, ſhall I ſend? *Charly* looked down, then at me, and was ready to cry; for my Father kept her ſtill on his Knee. Come, yes or no, ſays he, decides the Diſpute, and I'll let you go. Yes, ſays *Charly*. He then let her go, and ſending a Letter to the Earl,

Earl, invited him and Lord *D——r* to Dinner with him the next Day.

After Dinner, when we were by ourſelves, and the young Couple with us; my Lord, ſays my Father to the Earl, my Daughter tells me, that Lord *D——r* has a Reſpect for my Grandaughter *Charly*. (Here *Charly* roſe up and was going out) hold my Dear, ſays my Father, we are upon no Secrets, pray ſtay; ſo ſhe ſat down again. May it pleaſe your Grace ſaid the Earl, you cannot blame my Son for aſpiring, at leaſt, to ſo great an Happineſs: Your Grace only has the Power of conferring it: Your Grace is ſenſible what an additional Honour muſt accrue to my Family from ſuch an Alliance, could ſuch a Thing happen;——— I wiſh I could make my Son worthy of the Lady; but your Grace knows my Eſtate is but ſmall; all that I can with Conveniency, I would do for my Son; but I have other Children; I can ſpare him at moſt but fifteen Hundred Pounds a Year at preſent, which I am ſatisfied your Grace will think too little for his Subſiſtance, till my Death; when he muſt have five Thouſand more. Not at all, ſays my Father; your Lordſhip ought not to ſtreighten yourſelf, or your Family, and I aſſure your Lordſhip, I have ſo true a Regard for Lord *D——r*, that could I be convinced of the young ones Eſteem for each other, I ſhould think a far leſs Settlement ſufficient at preſent.

Lord

Lord *D——r*, (who had till then been ſilent,) ſaid, he could anſwer with an abſolute Certainty, but for himſelf; that as Miſs *Charly* was the firſt Lady on whom he had ever fixed his Affection, (if he was not an intire Stranger to his own Heart) he was ſure it was immoveable. Come *Charly*, ſays my Father, what ſay you? I begged him to excuſe her, before the Company; but he ſaid, ſhe muſt very ſoon ſay yes, if ſhe married; and he ſaw no Reaſon to leave my Lord in Suſpence: Either my Dear, ſays he, let the noble Lord know, he is as happy as you can at preſent make him, or let him know he cannot make you ſo.

Charly perceiving that Baſhfulneſs would not gain her the Man ſhe loved, pulling up her Courage, ſays ſhe, Sir, a true Anſwer to the Queſtion you are pleaſed to put to me, had been the laſt Thing Modeſty would have permitted me to reveal; but ſince I have your Commands to ſupport me in it, I ſhould be very much wanting to the Merit of Lord *D——r*, did I return any other Anſwer, than that the Heighth of my Ambition is to render his Lordſhip all poſſible Happineſs.

Now I like you Child, ſays my Father; my Lord, ſays he, I will ſettle on my Grand-daughter five Thouſand Pounds a Year, and give her fifty Thouſand Pounds; ſo I believe, we have very little need of further Debate. As for your own

own Eſtate, you have other Children, and ſome Time or other the Jointure will come to Lord *D——r*, ſo that a Settlement will be needleſs on him at preſent. The old Earl, with Tears in his Eyes, riſing, humbly thanked my Father for his Generoſity, and for the Honour he did both himſelf and his Son; and Lord *D——r* complimenting my Father, went up to *Charly*, ſaluted her, thanked her, and aſſured her, that his utmoſt Felicity had depended on her Sentence.

My Father then told them, he expected that the Solemnity ſhould be concluded that Day Se'nnight; which both agreeing to, the Earl and his Son were preparing to depart; but my Father told his Lordſhip, he looking upon him from that Moment as his Grandſon, it was his Deſire, that he remained with him till the Nuptials; ſo the Earl returned by himſelf, in order to get his Family ready to aſſiſt at the Ceremony.

On the Day appointed, the Earl came, with his three Sons, and two Daughters; and the Ceremony over, my Father inſiſted on their ſtaying a few Days with him; and at parting told his Lordſhip, that having a large Houſe, and but a ſmall Family; and as Houſe-keeping would run high in their ſmall Eſtate; he purpoſed, that his Lordſhip and his Lady ſhould live with him as long as they pleaſed, without

any

any Expence to them, and that he would maintain their ſeparate Houſhold. This gave great Joy to the new married Couple, and making all due Acknowledgments, for his unexpected Bounty, they aſſured him how ſenſible they were of the Obligations conferred upon them. The Earl, and his Family, then taking Leave, departed.

It is impoſſible to expatiate ſufficiently upon the noble Nature of the Duke, my Father; for he was never more in his proper Element, than in the Performance of ſome generous Action or other; whereby he might contribute either to the general or particular Benefit of Mankind. He had not one unthriving Tenant upon his whole Eſtate, for he ever aſſiſted their Induſtry: Nor was there any ſuch Thing as an honeſt indigent Man in his Neighbourhood: But then he bore a very ſevere Hand over the Indolent and the Vicious. He ſuſtained his Dignity only on proper Occaſions; kept a noble Houſe, under juſt Oeconomy; with Servants and Attendants, not for Shew, but Duty; for he would rather give a Piece of Money with a Fellow, to put him into ſome Buſineſs, than expend it on him in Idleneſs, at his own Houſe. Moſt of his Servants were taken in Boys, and bred under him, and if their Genius appeared remarkable, he would ſuit ther with proper Employments. He had a great Number of poor Children, Boys

and Girls, cloathed, and inſtructed in Letters by a Maſter of his own providing; and paid many weekly Penſions to aged impotent Perſons; and in theſe, and the like Exerciſes of his Beneficence, paſſed the greater Part of his Time; which made his whole Family, even to the Servants, adored and reſpected for many Miles round us.

He had been at Home two Years, and had many Times aſked me, if I had no Inclination for marrying again; but I always declined it. He deſired me not to be ſhy of it upon his Account; for my Dear, ſays he, as my only View is to make you happy, I would be no Check upon your Deſires. I told him, he was better to me than the beſt of Huſbands could be, and that himſelf, and my Children, being the only Care I ſought after, Marriage would be but an Incumbrance to me.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXX.

Captain Hawley's *Application to the Duke, on his Grandſon's debauching his Daughter. Compaſſion of the Duke. Scene between the Duke and* Harry. *He confeſſes his Fault.* Hawley's *ſecond Viſit with his Daughter. The Duke admires her. Noble Behaviour of the Duke. Gives Leave to marry her.* Hawley *overcome by the Duke's Benevolence. They are married. Fine Sentiments of* Hawley. *Duke offers him four Hundred Pounds a Year. Refuſes it. Charmes the Duke.*

ABOUT this Time an ugly Accident happened in our Family, which I feared would have been attended with great Diſpleaſure from my Father. As we were ſitting at Breakfaſt one Morning, a Servant came in, to let my Father know, that an elderly Gentleman begged leave to Speak to him. The Duke, who was ever eaſy of Acceſs, ordered the Servant to introduce him to us. He appearing to be much of a Gentleman by his Behaviour, my Father ordered a Seat for him, which having after ſome Compliments accepted, he labouring (we could plainly ſee) to bring out ſomething; the Duke deſired to know his Buſineſs: But inſtead of a Reply, he burſt into Tears. His Grace, judg-

ing that the Preſence of myſelf, and Lord *D—r* and his Lady, who were then with him, might be an Impediment to the Gentleman's unboſoming himſelf, nodded to us to leave the Room; but as were going out, he deſired his Grace to call me back again. I was a little ſurprized, and wondered what he ſhould want with me; when he began, as well as he was able to ſpeak, for weeping; O Madam, if I am not miſtaken, you are a Mother, as I am a Father; ——then the Tears ruſhing forth again, and putting his Handkerchief before his Face, he made a long Pauſe; when recovering himſelf; ——You, and all virtuous Perſons, ſays he, muſt be ſenſible of the Loſs of Honour. — Then pauſing, he wept again paſſionately.——His Grace and I, looking at each other, could not tell what to make of theſe broken Speeches; when he proceeded, my Gray-hairs muſt deſcend with Sorrow to the Grave. —— Your Grace, and you Madam, pardon a Father too full to vent my Misfortune. —— My only Child, my Daughter;——here the Tears ſtopped him again, till his Grace and I were almoſt moved to ſympathize with him. I ſay, Madam, added he, is undone.——She is ruined abſolutely,——for ever. His Grace then ſpeaking, ſaid, he very much compaſſionated him, whom he ſaw to be ſo overcome with Grief; but wiſhed him to moderate his Sorrow, and

relate

relate his Tale; and, though a Stranger, as he ſeemed to be an unfortunate Gentleman, if he could any ways be uſeful to him, he ſhould willingly contribute to it. My Lord, ſays he, I want but Peace,—inward Peace,—Innocence loſt, is never to be regained. Then wept again.

My Father giving him very mild and comforting Speeches, at laſt, ſays he, your Grace's Goodneſs, makes me ſorry that I cannot reveal my own Shame, without caſting a Reflection on one, who calls himſelf your Son, Madam, looking at me. My Son, ſays I, Sir? for Goodneſs ſake, what of him? O Madam, ſays he, he has deluded and debauched my only Child. ——It cannot be,——Madam, ſays he, ſhe is with Child by him. O! the Wretch! it cannot be my Son; why he is never from us.—— I wiſh, ſays he, I could have ſaid ſo. Yes Madam, for Weeks and Months together.——— Madam, was he not at Mr. *Graham*'s about five Months ago? Yes, ſays I, truly he was there, I believe for a Month, or ſix Weeks; and from thence, ſays he, I date my Sorrow. Pray Sir, ſays his Grace, may I aſk your Name, and where you live? for I can't remember ſeeing you about this Country before—My Name, ſays he, is *Hawley*; I live about Half a Mile from Mr. *Graham*'s; I was bred in the Army, was a Lieutenant of Dragoons; am a younger Branch of a good Family, my Father was a Colonel; but my Re-

giment being broke, I retired, and have lived on two Hundred Pounds a Year ever ſince, in a private Decency; gave my poor Daughter a ſober genteel Education; and, ſince the Loſs of my dear Wife, ſhe has been my ſole Comfort, till this horrid Ignomy is fallen upon her, and me in her.——It overcomes me.

Sir, ſays my Father, though this ſhould really be as you ſay; come, I can't ſee that it is paſt all Remedy. Remedy, Sir, replies Mr. *Hawley*, is there a Remedy on Earth for loſt Virtue, and Reputation? Sir, ſays my Father, you ſeem a good worthy Man, let me ſee you again in two or three Days, and bring your Daughter with you; come and take a Dinner with me, we will ſee what can be done, for our talking of it thus, only adds to your Sorrow, and makes it neither better or worſe.

After *Hawley* was gone, I waited ſometime for my Father to ſpeak; but he being ſilent, Lord! Sir, ſays I, how can you be thus compoſed? Why what would you have me do? Nay, I don't know, ſays I, but for my Part, I ſhall be ready to kill the Raſcal when I ſee him, to go to abuſe the poor young Creature; I'll teach him to keep himſelf to himſelf. My Son, to bring a Diſgrace upon himſelf, and that poor Gentleman's Daughter! I cannot bear the Thoughts of it. My Father, clapping his Hand upon mine, *Patty*, ſays he, don't accuſe your Father.

Father. I own, I did not think who I ſpoke before; but finding I had over-ſhot myſelf; Sir, ſays I, it would vex any one, to think how poor Mr. *Hawley* grieves himſelf about it; ay, ſays he, I am ſorry for him; but in Age, we muſt remember Youth, and make Allowances.

It grew now towards Dinner Time, and as his Grace and I were parting, to dreſs ourſelves, in comes *Harry* with his Gun, not knowing any Thing of what had paſſed; ſtay a little, ſays my Father to me, here comes *Harry*, let's have ſome Diſcourſe with him? *Harry* produced his Game, and ſeemed very alert upon the Sport he had had; when his Grandfather aſked him, how many Miſtreſſes he kept about the Country, and viſited with his Gun, under pretence of Shooting? I, Sir, ſays *Harry?* not one I'll aſſure you. What? ſays my Father? a luſty young Fellow, and not have a Miſtreſs? *Harry*, who had never had ſuch a Queſtion put to him before, and knowing himſelf tardy, could not upon the Repetition of it, help being a little fluſtred; and bluſhing, look, ſays his Grace, *Patty*, how he bluſhes; ſee, he betrays himſelf. *Harry* could hardly take it; but being afraid to ſhew Diſlike; why *Harry*, ſays my Father, they tell me your little one is to be brought Home very ſoon; this knocked him up, and he had not a Word more to ſay. I was reſolved not to interpoſe in the Affair myſelf, thinking I

had ſaid more than my Father approved before. Well *Harry*, ſays my Father, I hope you have made handſome Proviſion for the Infant, for I intend to ſtand Godfather.

Sir, ſays *Harry*, I humbly beg your's, and my Mamma's Pardon, and I hope you will excuſe me, it was a raſh Thing I muſt own; you ſhall never have Occaſion to find the like Fault with me again. My Father fell a Laughing, ſo *Harry*, ſays he, now you have diſcovered ſomewhat to us indeed. Sir, ſays he, it is to no Purpoſe to deceive myſelf and you; for if you know nothing before, you ſoon muſt; I own my Guilt, and am ſorry for it, for the young Lady's ſake. What? a Lady too, ſays my Father? pray who is this young Lady? Sir, ſays *Harry*, when I was over at Mr. *Graham*'s, his Daughter introduced me to the moſt charming young Creature upon the Face of the Earth; I muſt confeſs, her Beauty ſtruck me the Moment I ſaw her; but her agreeable Converſation left it out of Diſpute to me, that there was not another Woman in the World to compare with her. In ſhort, Sir, I loved her to that Degree, that though I only paid Mr. *Graham* a Viſit for a Week, I could not leave him under ſix; for either ſhe was with us, or we with her, every Night.

I at laſt found Opportunity to break my Mind to her in private, and believing ſhe loved me

me too, for I could diſcern it long before, I could not forbear preſſing her to Enjoyment, which not without the utmoſt Difficulty, and many Meetings, I obtained, under Promiſe of being very kind to her. Kind to her, ſays his Grandfather, what is that?——Tell me punctually what you promiſed her! I promiſed her I would for ever love her,——and be kind to her, ſays he. Come, *Harry*, ſays my Father, the Truth; did not you Promiſe to marry her? *Harry* heſitated, but my Father ſtaring him full in the Face; I did, Sir, ſays he, promiſe her, if I was at Liberty, I would marry her. And why did you tell her a Lye, ſays my Father? Did ſhe Conſent till you made that Promiſe? No Sir, ſays *Harry*, ſhe would by no Means. Why did not you marry her then, ſays my Father? for fear of your's, and my Mamma's Anger. Suppoſe you had our Leave to marry her, ſays my Father? I would prefer her to the whole Sex, ſays he. Go, go, young Man, ſays my Father, the Woman ought to be taken Care of.

When *Harry* had retired; bleſs me Sir, ſays I, how could you be ſo patient with him? Looking at thee, it was but juſt, my Dear, ſays he. Come, come, it is but acting old Times over again; and I hope this Boy will be happier after it than I have been. I'll do my Endeavour he ſhall; upon this we parted.

The third Day came Captain *Hawley* with his Daughter, and were conducted into the Parlour, where the firſt who went to them was his Grace; he would have had me appeared firſt, but I did not think it ſo proper. He had not been with them five Minutes, before he ſtept out again, and running to my Chamber, *Patty*, ſays he, thy Son *Harry* has a moſt exquiſite Taſte; there is ſomething more than Woman in the Parlour; I never kiſſed ſo fine a Creature in my Days; I am charmed with her. Dear Sir, ſays I, don't laviſh out her Charms ſo, you will certainly turn *Harry*'s Rival. If any could tempt me, ſays he, it would be her: I deſire you will make haſte and come down.

I dreſſed very eagerly to ſee this wonderful Lady; and my Father, who tarried for my coming, introduced me to her; but when I had beheld her, I began to think that his Grace had but deſcribed the worſt Half of her, for in all my Life, I never beheld ſo ſweet a Creature.

When we were ſat, Captain *Hawley* began again to move his Complaint; telling us, that at his Grace's Deſire he had brought his poor Daughter. Hearing us on ſuch a Subject, ſhe covered her Face with her Fan, and dropt ſome Tears; which his Grace (who was ſoon moved at ſuch a Sight) perceiving; young Lady, ſays he, pray veil not that lovely Face; which might have tempted a much more abſtemious Perſon

Perſon than my Grandſon. Nay, bluſh not, ſays he, for you have done nothing to be aſhamed of. Good your Grace, hold, ſay not ſo I beſeech you, ſaid the Captain. Sir, ſays my Father, I know what I ſay, and it may be I know more of the Matter than you do: I ſay Madam, you have done nothing to cauſe you Shame; my Grandſon has informed me, that it was under his Engagement to marry you, when he was at Liberty, that you complied with his Deſires, which otherwiſe, he aſſures me, you would not have done; from which Moment I look upon you as Man and Wife, in Affection; to be confirmed, ſubject to the Condition: And that I keep you no longer in Suſpence, I do now declare him to be at Liberty to purſue his Inclination: Then ringing the Bell, he ordered *Harry* to be called, who coming in, was vaſtly ſurprized to ſee his Miſtreſs and her Father there. Says his Grace, *Harry*, you are now at Liberty, with the Conſent of me and your Mother, to perform your Engagements with that Lady.

Sir, ſays *Harry*, you confound me; do you and my Mamma conſent, and give me Leave to marry her, Sir? We do, ſays his Grace, if it is your own Inclination. Mine Sir, ſays *Harry*, does it ſtick only there? Then running to her, and claſping her in his Arms, I am for ever happy *Lucy*, for ever happy. Let us lie down and

and die at the Feet of ſuch tender Parents, who can, contrary to the perverſe Cuſtoms of the World, combine to exalt their Childrens Felicity? What do we not owe to you, Sir, and Madam, for this Act of Complacency, and Condeſcenſion? Our whole Lives can never compenſate for this one Act of Benevolence to us. He was running on, and when he would have finiſhed is uncertain, had not his Grace eſpied Captain *Hawley*, at the further End of the Room, as he thought in a Fit. When we all running to aſſiſt him, found him unable to ſpeak, or even to breathe; for his Heart beating for Paſſage at his Throat, to fly to his generous Benefactor, ſtopped his Breath ſo, that he could only by interrupted Gulps, get any Air down; but applying ſome Hartſhorn I had in my Pocket, and letting in the Air through one of the Windows upon him, he by Degrees recovered.

When the firſt Struggle of their Paſſions was over, they all grew calm again; and his Grace enquired, whether the Accident was known to any Body beſides themſelves? and hearing it was not, he ſent immediately for his Chaplain, and married them.

In the Afternoon, Captain *Hawley*, who was now in ſo great a Family, not caring to be impertinent, made an Offer of returning Home, but his Grace deſired he would ſpend the Evening with us. When Lord *D——r* and his Lady,

dy, who had been upon a Viſit, returned, they were ſurprized, at hearing their Brother was married to Miſs *Hawley* ſo ſuddenly; but as their was no keeping the Thing a Secret from them, they both knowing her, I let them into the Miſtery, and they complimented her on the Occaſion, giving her the beſt of Characters.

The next Day his Grace took Captain *Hawley* into the Garden, ſays he, Captain, methinks you ſhould be quite melancholy (now your Daughter hath left you) at living by yourſelf, with only one Servant. Pleaſe your Grace, ſays the Captain, my Life for ſome Years has been very private, in order, with my ſmall Pittance, to make both Ends meet in a genteel Way; and, between my Book, and my Garden, I doubt not to wear out the Remains of Age in Comfort, now your Grace has been ſo favourable to my poor Child; for I own, my Lord, ſhe was the only Comfort of my Life. I am thinking, ſays the Duke, of taking you into my Family. May it pleaſe your Grace, ſays *Hawley*, I have lived near thirty Years upon my Half Pay, and a very ſmall Fortune of my own, in all the Tranquility and Temperance that a Man can well enjoy; I have been looking upwards moſt of the Time, having been diſturbed with no Care, but that of my Daughter's Welfare, ever ſince my Wife died, which is now fifteen Years. My Life has been one continued Application to

Frame

Frame her Mind into the ſtricteſt Senſe of her Duty to God and Man, which by Degrees hath ſo wrought upon my own Underſtanding, that, in order to her Inſtruction, I have furniſhed myſelf with ſuch a Sett of Principles, as can only be maintained in Retirement, and which I would not now deſert, for the beſt Principality on Earth; for being void of temporal Engagements, my Thoughts have been more accuſtomed to heavenly Entertainments, than to any Thing without my Doors; and till the accidental Slip of my Daughter's Conduct, I would not have exchanged the ſolitary Peace of my own Mind, for the moſt gainful Employ in the Kingdom. That, I own, overſet all my promiſed Joys; and Heaven forgive me, I could not forbear condemning Providence for her Miſconduct, after the upright Concern I had ever taken to prevent (as I thought) the Poſſibility of any ſuch Attempt proving ſucceſsful: But ſince it hath now, through your Grace's princely Concern for injured Virtue, and under the Guidance of the ſame Providence, been productive of ſo happy an Event to me; I ſhall have no other Wiſh in Life, than to direct all my future Views to the Contemplation of the great Author of all Occurrences, in condemning my own ſhort ſighted Petulancy, adoring his ſupreme Power and Goodneſs, and in preparing

paring for a welcome Departure to his Kingdom, whenever he ſhall pleaſe to ſummon me.

My Father, as he afterwards told me, was in Raptures at old *Hawley*'s Diſcourſe; for, ſays he, he delivered it with ſo unaffected a Simplicity, that I am ſatisfied his whole Soul went out with every Word he ſpoke; and I was too well pleaſed with what he ſaid, to urge him again to quit his Retirement; but thinking to add my Mite to his Contentment, I then told him, that ſince he had made his Election for Solitude, I would endeavour to make it ſtill more agreeable to him, by an Allowance of one hundred Pounds a Quarter, which I would ſettle upon him for his Life.

Oh! my Lord, ſays he, tempt me not to the Indulgence of my Paſſions, which are ſeldom to be regulated under Affluence; for either I muſt launch into Intemperance, or deſtroy the Deſign of your Donation: I can enjoy no more than I am now poſſeſſed of, conſiſtent with my preſent Scheme of Life, nor dare I truſt myſelf with that Increaſe of it, which muſt neceſſarily multiply my Concern for its Diſpoſal. I can afford to exerciſe ſome ſmall Charities, out of my preſent Store, and your Grace needs not a Hand to diſtribute your's; for ſuch a benevolent Diſpoſition as you enjoy, can neither want a Heart for the Duty, or Objects to employ it on.

My

My Father ſaid, he then took him by the Hand, and frankly declared to him, that he ſhould ever after eſteem him as his beſt Friend; enjoining him to viſit him often; for, ſays he, I have received more mental Satisfaction from this Moment's Talk with you, than I ever acquired from my Book, or the Pulpit in my whole Life; and though I ſhall in preſent ſettle five Thouſand Pounds a Year upon *Harry*, the Benefit I have acquired from your Converſation, is of more Worth to my Mind than any other Fortune you could have beſtowed on your Daughter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXI.

The Author goes to ſpend the Winter in London, *taking her Son and Daughter, and Mrs.* Graham *with her. Meets Captain* Powell *and Captain* Farquharſon *at Saint* Paul's. *Diſcourſe between them. The Author's Method of diſcovering to Mrs.* Graham, *that Captain* Powell *was alive. Will not believe it. Sees him herſelf next Day. Is almoſt diſtracted. The Author diſcourſes. Captain* Powell *about his Wife, he thinking her dead. Gives him Account of her Travels. Long Diſcourſe about ſecond Marriage. Diſcovers her Marriage to* Graham. *Introduces him to his Wife. Their Meeting and Reconciliation.*

WHEN my Son's Wedding had been ſome Weeks over, and all Ceremonies ended; I told my Father, that it growing near Winter, I thought it would be proper for us, in order to ſave my Daughter's Credit as much as poſſible, to take her to his Houſe in Town to Lye-in there, which he very much approved of; but ſaid, he would not go with me, but take *Hawley* Home to him till I returned.

I prepared all for our Journey, and my Lord *D——r* and his Lady, being invited to ſpend ſome

ſome Time at his Father's, I reſolved to petition Mr. *Graham* to let his Lady divert herſelf for the Winter with me.

Having got his Conſent, and all Things in Readineſs; towards the latter End of *November* we came to *London*, and my Daughter did not look to lye-in till *February* or *March*. We ſpent our Time moſt agreeably together, at Court, Plays, Operas, and every polite Amuſement; and amongſt the reſt, at the Rehearſal of the Muſick, for the Feſtival of the Sons of the Clergy, we procured Tickets, and went to Saint *Paul*'s to hear it; but happening to be full late, we could not poſſibly all get into the ſame Gallery; my Daughter and I being obliged to ſit on one Side, and Mrs. *Powell* and my Son on the other.

We had agreed to meet in the lower End of the Church when all was over, and walk till the Crowd was diſperſed, that we might not be thronged.

The Muſick being finiſhed, and the Service done, juſt as I came to the Bottom of the Gallery Stairs, miſſing my Footing, I fell down upon my Knees; when two Gentlemen ſtepping to me, lifted me up, one under each Arm; but what was my Aſtoniſhment! when turning to each, to thank them for the Favour; I ſaw in the one, the Renegado Captain *Farquharſon*, who had taken

taken me Priſoner off *Sallee*, and in the other, my former Friend Captain *Powell*. They obſerving me to redden, and look ſo piercingly at them, did the ſame at me. Sir, ſaid I, is not your Name *Powell?* It is Madam, ſays he; and I have certainly known your Face, though I cannot at preſent recollect it. Says Captain *Farquharſon*, I am very ſure I have ſeen the Lady before too, but can't for my Life remember where. What? ſays I, Captain *Farquharſon*, have you forgot your Priſoner, your Captive? The Captain ſtarted, as in Amaze, and both ſeemed exceeding glad to ſee me, and would have entered into longer Confabulation, but I had not Time for that, and only told them who I was, and where I lived, and to obtain their Promiſe to dine with me the next Day; but Captain *Farquharſon* made ſome Scruple as to his Safety; for he told me, it was not known to a Soul in *England*, what Occupation he had followed, and if I ſhould betray him, it would coſt him his Life. No, ſays I, Captain (ſmiling) I have too great a Regard for my Convert, to uſe any Means that may be prejudical to you; but would much rather do you any Service in my Power, than the leaſt Damage. I could not however get rid of them, till they had handed me to my Coach, which they did, and took Leave; and Captain *Powell* enquiring after his Wife,

Wife, I ſaid, I would tell him more To-morrow. I then ordering my Servant to drive to the other Side Door of the Church, ſent him in for Mrs. *Graham* and my Son, and we went Home.

Mrs. *Graham* all the Way we went, wondered how we came round to the wrong Door, and why I did not come to her in the Church; and ſeeing me look very thoughtful, had it over and over again; and wondered I was ſo dull, till I told her I had received a Fall, coming down Stairs, which had Hurt me a little; and my Daughter aſſuring her, that I fell down ſome of the Gallery Stairs, that ſeemed to ſet all right again.

So ſoon as we had dined, I went to my Cloſet, and ſent for Mrs. *Graham*. When ſhe came, my dear Friend, ſays I, you have need at preſent of all the Conduct and Reſolution you are Miſtreſs of, to ſupport you under what I am now about to diſcloſe to you. My Preface turned her as pale as Aſhes; What can you mean, my Dear, ſays ſhe? Lord! what is the Matter? What has happened? Have you heard any Thing from the Country? I hope Mr. *Graham* is well. None of theſe, ſays I; No, you can never gueſs what I have to tell you, nor can I dare to venture at bringing it out. But what, pray what is it? Don't keep me

me upon the Torture, ſays ſhe; Lord! what can it be? tell me, my Dear, ſays ſhe, pray tell me? Suppoſe, ſays I, Mr. *Graham* ſhould be dead? O Heaven forbid! ſays ſhe, that would diſtract me; but you ſaid it was nothing of that, ſo pray tell me the Truth? Suppoſe Captain *Powell* ſhould be living, ſays I? What ſays ſhe, No, no, my Dear, that good Man is long ſince at Reſt. I promiſe you I ſaw him this Day, ſaid I. Pſhaw, my Dear, ſays ſhe, is that all? It is a Fancy, a meer Deluſion, Somebody like him perhaps. Nay, ſays I, more than that; I ſpoke to him, and he to me, and he is to dine with me To-morrow; This is abſolutely Fact, or never truſt me. At this poor Mrs. *Graham* was ſtruck quite dumb; but ſtill believing there was ſome Miſtery concealed, ſhe recollected herſelf; Come, ſays ſhe, you can't but ſee that I am in intollerable Pain, till you unriddle to me; pray let me know what you mean? My Dear, I am in ſerious Earneſt, ſays I. He ſpoke to me, and enquired after you, but I poſtponed further Diſcourſe till To-morrow, when they are both to dine with me. Both to dine with you, ſays ſhe? Yes, ſays I, there was one with him, that you don't know, the Renegado Captain that took me, before I was brought into *Leghorn*. Pſhaw, pſhaw, ſays ſhe, this is all an Inconſiſtency, and I am determined

termined not to believe one Word more of it till I ſee them come: I know there is ſome Skit at the Bottom of it. I ſuppoſe you have met with Somebody called *Powell*, and ſome Captain, I am ſure it is ſome ſuch Thing. Well, ſays I, if you will not believe, let us call a new Cauſe. Ay, ay, ſays ſhe, ſo we will: Though I vow you frighted me almoſt to Death at firſt.

I reſolved to ſay no more of it; but took Care ſhe ſhould not be in the Way, leſt he ſhould ſee her, before ſhe had ſeen, and was ſure it was him; ſo I kept her at Work with me, the next Day, in my Chamber, which fronted the Gate, till they came. When they rung at the Gate, ſhe ſtarted up, and retreating a little from the Window, the firſt that entered was Mr. *Powell*. She no ſooner ſaw that it was him, but, undone ſays ſhe, and fell like a dead Corps upon the Floor. The violent Noiſe brought up my Woman, my Daughter, and a Maid, to ſee what was the Matter, ſuppoſing I had had a Fall; but obſerving her in that Condition, one ran here, another there, to bring Drops and Water. As for myſelf, her Diſorder had ſo ſhocked me, that believing her really dead, I was quite helpleſs, and thought I ſhould have followed her: But at laſt, with much ado, they brought her to herſelf; when I ordered them

them to lay her upon my Bed, and retire, for that Reſt would be the moſt uſeful Thing to her.

Every Body being withdrawn, I aſked her how ſhe did? When telling me ſhe was pretty well again; Are you now ſatisfied, ſays I? To my own Deſtruction, ſays ſhe. I can never ſtand this Shock. O! with what Face can I behold Mr. *Powell*, having given myſelf to the Embraces of another? Then ſays I, you cannot ſay but you Love the Captain. Love him, ſays ſhe? Can I do otherwiſe? No, he was the firſt I ever did, and ſhall be the laſt Man I ever will love; but what will poor Mr. *Graham* think, ſays I? Look upon me as his Whore, ſays ſhe, and ſo will dear Mr. *Powell* too, if ever he receives me again? O! my Heart is upon the Wreack, ſays ſhe! Pray, my Dear, find ſome Relief for me, or I ſhall go mad; there is no bearing it.

Seeing her rave in ſuch a Manner, I deſired her to be compoſed, becauſe, as my Son would dine Abroad, I ſhould deſire my Daughter to keep her Company above, leaſt any Thing ſhould be ſtarted at Dinner, not ſo proper to come to her Ears; but deſired her to inform me how ſhe would have me manage with Mr. *Powell?* Aſk a Stock, a Brute ſays, ſhe, it has as much Contrivance as I have: I am altogether void

void of Life, of Heart, of Thought, of every Thing.

I left her, with a Promiſe of ſending my Daughter to her and of acting for her as for myſelf: I then entered the Room to my two Captains, who were both extreamly ſurprized to ſee me live in ſo grand a Manner; and having both ſaluted me, the firſt Thing Captain *Powell* ſaid was, to enquire after his *Biddy*, and if I knew whether ſhe was living or dead? I told him ſhe was brought to-bed of a dead Child, on the Advices we received of his Ship and Crew being all loſt. The Captain's Eyes, at the Repetition of ſo fatal an Accident, were ready to overflow; but deſiring to know whether ſhe came to *England* with me, or not? I told him, that an old Suitor having followed me to *Leghorn*, I was married there, after he left me; and that I took her and Maſter with me to the *Brazills*, to my Huſband's Father's, who was Governour there; where ſhe lived with me, and as I did; but that her concern for his ſuppoſed Loſs, had well nigh deſtroyed her. Poor Woman, ſays he, and wept. I then told him, of the Surprize of the Fort by the *Indians*, and of our Captivity, and of the Means of my Releaſe, and her being carried up the Country. I told him that the Report of his Death being ſo well grounded, and never having the leaſt Expecta-

tion

tion of ſeeing him more, I would have had her marry again, and ſettle herſelf. Ay, ſays he, poor Creature, why did not ſhe, as I was no more, to her Apprehenſion: She was very wrong ſhe did not. And yet, ſays I, Captain, if ſhe had, as you are ſtill living, what would you have ſaid? You Men, very few of you, would ever have looked upon a Woman after ſuch an Action, though done in the greateſt Innocence. No? ſays he, the Man muſt be a *Barbarian*, that ſhould blame his Wife in ſuch a Caſe as this, for making her Life as agreeable as poſſible with a ſecond Huſband, being ſo well aſſured as ſhe was of the Loſs of the Firſt. I'm afraid, ſays I, Captain, you would be of another Opinion, ſhould you ever find Mrs. *Powell* in the Arms of a ſecond Huſband. The Captain rapping out a ſolemn Oath, which I never knew him do before, proteſted, that provided the Love ſhe had formerly born him, returned upon the firſt Intimation of his being living, he ſhould not only commend the Action, but receive her to his Embraces, with the ſame Cordiality as ever he did in his Life. Might you be truſted upon Honour, Captain, ſays I? If I am not an utter Stranger to my own Conceptions Madam, ſays he, I might; but alas, that happy Proſpect is, I fear, at too great a Diſtance ever to bleſs me. Captain, ſays I, I have your

Honour for what you ſay, in the Preſence of that Gentleman, and ſince you appear to bear that worthy Character, which Mrs. *Powell* always has given, and ſtill gives you. Still gives me, Madam, ſays he? Is the dear Woman then in Being? Be patient Sir, ſays I, and you ſhall hear what I know of the Matter. I then related to him the Death of my Huſband, and my Arrival at *Liſbon*, my Troubles there, and how I was extricated by the Arrival of Mrs. *Powell*; that ſhe came to *England* with me, to my Father's, and how we had viſited her Relations in *Shropſhire*, and that a few Years ſince, ſhe had married Mr. *Graham*, a very worthy Country Gentleman, who had made a Settlement of ſeven Hundred Pounds a Year upon her. Ah Madam! ſays he, then I fear our Meeting can't be attended with the Circumſtance of returning Love I mentioned; No, I have no ſeven Hundred Pounds a Year to ſettle upon her; my Search is at an End, for I ſhould be ſorry to interrupt her preſent Enjoyments, by the Knowledge of my Life, unleſs I was aſcertained of an equal Return of her Affections. ——Thou art ſo valuable a Man, ſays I, Captain, that you charm me; and that you may no longer be doubtful of the Regard ſhe has, even to the foregoing every other Accommodation in Life for you, I do aſſure you, that your Sentiments,

Sentiments, if real, as I know not how to diſpute that, will give her the ſublimeſt Gratification; and that ſhe longs but for your Forgiveneſs, and Reconciliation, to make her ſtill an happy Woman. Lord, Madam! ſays he, what have I to forgive? nothing at all. I have only to require, that She be capable of her firſt Love to me. Uſe her gently, ſays I, Captain, and you ſhall ſee her. When, ſays he? Now, ſays I, for you alone can reprieve her from her preſent Anxiety. O Madam, ſays he, don't flatter my Hopes to deſtroy me? Follow me Sir, ſays I, but don't come into the Room, till I call you; he came, and waited at my Chamber Door, which I left open for him, till I repeated to Mrs. *Graham*, all that had paſſed between us. Will that dear good Man, ſays ſhe, forgive me? I'll riſe this Inſtant, and go to him. I, then beckoning him in, my deareſt *Biddy*, ſays he, I'll ſave you the Trouble of going to me, I have been ſeeking thee for Years, but now I am bleſt. Can you forgive your innocent, though injurious Wife, ſays ſhe? Is he living, that in this Caſe, could not, ſays he? If ſo, he is unworthy the Name of a Man. Can you receive me to your Arms again, ſays ſhe? My dear Life, ſays he, I have heard the Whole of what you can tell me; ſo no more, for I doubt not but we are this Day united in

Affections, as ſincerely as ever. Here, ſhe pulling him to her, and claſping him to her Breaſt, nothing paſſed on both Sides, but Sighs, and bitter Sobs, for a full Quarter of an Hour. And are we reunited, ſays ſhe? He aſſured her ſhe was as dear to him as ever, and ſealing it with a Kiſs, they dried up their Tears, and we returned down to our Renegado Captain.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXII.

Captain Farquharſon *recounts his and Captain* Powell's *Actions. Captain* Powell *declares his Loſs of the Ship, and Eſcape with Life. Mrs.* Graham *ſcruples to bed with Captain* Powell. *Have Council's Opinion. Diſcourſe between the Author and her thereon. Captain* Farquharſon *reveals his Circumſtances to the Author. Captain* Powell *finds out that his Wife is a large Fortune. The Author writes to the Duke, to inform* Graham *of Captain* Powell's *Life. Receives* Graham's *Anſwer. Diſcourſe between Captain* Powell *and her. The Author purchaſes* Farquharſon *a Commiſſion, and gives him a Hundred Guineas. All return to* Derbyſhire. *Meeting of Captain* Powell *and his Wife, and* Graham. *Generous Treatment on both Sides. Reaſons for the Author's Writing this Hiſtory.*

DURING the above Reconciliation between Captain *Powell* and his Lady, Dinner had waited, till it was almoſt ſpoiled, and after it was over, I deſired the two Captains to inform me, how they became ſo well acquainted; and Captain *Powell* being otherwiſe

engaged with his Lady, Captain *Farquharſon* began, with telling me, that when we were carried to *Leghorn*, his Ship and Cargoe being confiſcated, he was ſent to Priſon, in order to be exchanged, when Opportunity offered, for ſome Chriſtian Captive. He ſaid, that during his Confinement, having then ſo much Time on his Hands, and no Means of inflaming himſelf with Liquors, he more and more conſidered, what I had ſaid to him on Board his Ship. He firſt of all thought how amiable a Light I appeared in, even to him, againſt whoſe Inclinations I ſo ſtrenuouſly exerted myſelf; and calling to Mind the Reflection I had made, upon his quitting his Chriſtianity for *Mahometaniſm*; and that gauling him like a ſore Wound, he reſolved to turn honeſt, renounce *Mahomet*, and, if the Almighty would receive him, to reſume his Chriſtianity: That making his Intent known to a certain Prieſt, he abjured his falſe Religion, and received Abſolution, upon which he procured his Diſcharge: That upon breaking out of the War between the great Powers of *Europe*, Captain *Powell* and he found themſelves on Board a ſmall Privateer, fitted out to cruiſe upon the *French* and *Spaniards*, by the *Engliſh* Merchants in *Italy*, Captain *Powell* as Mate, and himſelf as Gunner; that having met with a very rich Prize, and the Captain *Sebaſtian Andreda* being killed

killed in the Beginning of the Engagement, Captain *Powell*, as Mate, fought the Ship, took, and brought in the Prize; which being a much fitter Ship for an Engagement, than ſhe that took her, the Owners converted her into a Privateer, ſending Captain *Powell* (who took him for his Mate) Captain of her.

That taking ſeveral good Prizes, Captain *Powell* bought a Veſſel of his own, having before heard at *Leghorn*, that his Lady was gone to the *Weſt-Indies*, but to what Part was unknown: That Captain *Powell* taking a great Liking to him, took him in a third Sharer; that they traded from Port to Port, amongſt the *Engliſh*, *Dutch*, *Spaniſh*, and *Portugueſe* Settlements in *America*, but could gain no Intelligence of what he ſo earneſtly ſought after. They had by this Time, he told me, made up a conſiderable Sum of Money, and were returning to *Copenhagen*, when a Storm ariſing at Southweſt, they were caſt away upon the Coaſt of *Ireland*, and their Ship and Cargoe entirely loſt, except ſome few Things, which they got from the Wreck two or three Days after, and ſold there for one Hundred and Seventy Pounds. With this Money, he ſaid, they arrived at *London*, in hopes of procuring a Paſſage to *Denmark*; but meeting luckily with his Lady, he preſumed Captain *Powell*'s Voyage was ſpoiled.

Mrs. *Powell* then deſired to know, how the Captain happened to eſcape with Life from the Loſs of his Ship; he told her, that leaving *Venice*, a Tempeſt aroſe at Southeaſt, when it blowing very hard, (in order to keep off a Lee-ſhore) at paſſing the Gulph, and hawling rather too cloſe to the Wind, his Ship heeled prodigiouſly; and all on a ſudden, the Cargoe ſhifting, ſhe overſet, and went to the Bottom immediately; that he being upon Deck, where there was an empty Barrel that fell over Board with him, and floating, he juſt caught Hold of its Chine, before it got out of his Reach; that being about Half a League from Shore, he was ſo ſpent with Labour, and the Beating of the Waves, that he could hold out no longer, and the Water running down his Throat very faſt, he gave himſelf for loſt, his Senſes being quite gone; but he remembered, that juſt before he loſt his Senſes, he thruſt his Hand, though with Difficulty, into the Bung-hole of the Caſk; that it was the next Day, before he knew that he was alive, and then, he underſtood that he was taken up by a Fiſherman, and laid along in his Cabin, where, perceiving Life, he covered him up warm, and by the next Morning he came to himſelf; he ſaid, he was ſo ill and weak for a long Time, that he was only juſt conveyed on Shore, but was not able to ſtir

Hand

Hand or Foot with the Rheumatiſm, for ſeveral Months after, neither could any one underſtand him, or he them, in the forlorn Parts he was arrived at; that when he recovered, procuring a Paſſage to *Leghorn*, he found us gone to *America*, but to what Country-Settlement he could not find out. The reſt, ſays he, you have heard from Captain *Farquharſon*.

The Gentlemen being ſtepped out, my dear Friend, ſays I, taking *Biddy* by the Hand, for I know not by what Name I am to call you, ſure you muſt a very happy Woman, to have your Country Huſband, and your *London* one. Why Child, ſays I, this Night will be a new Wedding to you. Indeed, ſays ſhe, you may joke if you pleaſe, who are not a Party concerned; but let me tell you, if you was, you would have little Heart for that Sport: You can't imagine, (though I ſeem, and really am ſo bleſt in the Sight of Captain *Powell*) but I have a great Regard for good Mr. *Graham*, whom I have innocently plunged into a Scene of Difficulties, if he loves me, as I have all the Reaſon imaginable to believe he does; and as for your Talk of my Wedding Night, though my Tenderneſs for Mr. *Powell* is ſo great, that I could deny him nothing; yet, before I bed with him, I muſt be ſatisfied of the Legality of it.

Hey dey, ſays I, is not he your only Huſband while living? Ay, ſays ſhe, but I have heard it ſaid, that if a Huſband is abſent ſeven Years, he ſhall be dead as to his Wife, and if ſhe marries again, the ſecond Huſband ſhall keep her. Nay, ſays I, if you plead Law for what you do, I am reſolved to be at the Expence of one Guinea, to try that Cauſe. Come, ſays I, dreſs, and I'll ſatisfy you preſently.

We deſired the Gentlemen to divert themſelves till our Return, for I had before told them both, that I would not part with them that Night; ſo ſtepping into the Coach, we drove to Doctors-Commons, and enquiring for Doctor *H—b—n*, ſtated our Caſe in a juſt Light to him; and he, for his Fee, gave the good Man his Mare again. As we returned, now, my Dear, ſaid I, you can't object againſt making the Captain a happy Man. I don't know what to ſay to it, adds ſhe, but it ſeems very odd to me, to bed with another Man, before I am parted from Mr. *Graham*; I can't tell how to come into it; it has a bad Appearance in my Mind. What, ſays I, will you tell the Captain, you beg to be excuſed, for, indeed, you muſt take your Leave of Mr. *Graham* firſt? No, that, ſays ſhe, I can't bear the Thoughts of. Then pri'thee, ſays I, don't be fooliſh, with your Whims and Chimeras; has not the poor

Man

Man travelled round the Globe to find you, and it being, as you ſee, the Council's Opinion that you are his own, would you now go to aſk Mr. *Graham*'s Leave, whether you ſhall lie with your own Huſband? For, in plain Terms, it amounts to no more than that, in the long run, think or ſay what you will: And I verily believe, that, if I had not born thus hard upon her, her Scruples, in all Probability, would have ſo far diminiſhed the Captain's Conceit of her Affections for him, that he might have diſregarded her ever after.

The next Morning Captain *Farquharſon*, before Captain *Powell* was ſtirring, returned me Abundance of Thanks, for the good Advice I had given to him, when in the ready Road to Deſtruction; and telling me, he could imagine no leſs now, than that he muſt ſhift for himſelf, for that Captain *Powell* having recovered his Lady, he would ſcarce venture to Sea again, unleſs upon ſome very good Footing. I told him, I ſuppoſed not, and enquired what Way of Life he purpoſed to follow. He ſaid, it was very uncertain to him yet, but if Captain *Powell* and he had returned to *Denmark*, as they propoſed, he was in Expectation of ſome Commiſſion in the Army, that being what he had been originally bred to: He told me, he ſhould not have above fifty Pounds, when he parted from *Powell*,

Powell, he being intituled to two Thirds of what they ſaved in *Ireland*; and he preſumed, when all Charges were born, that would be the moſt that would come to his Share; with which, he ſaid, he muſt travel into *Scotland*, he believed, and look out for ſome Employment there.

I aſked if he could not get ſome Poſt in the Army here? But he told me, not without Money. I then ordered him to enquire what a Lieutenancy in the Foot would coſt, and let me know as ſoon as he could.

The Captain and his Lady being come down to Breakfaſt, Captain *Farquharſon* bid them Good-morrow; and now, Fellow-Traveller, ſays he, I hope you are happy. As my dear Wife can make me, ſays Captain *Powell*, but we can't ſubſiſt upon nothing but Love. I told him, that his Lady had a very pretty Fortune, when ſhe married Mr. *Graham*; and that, as ſhe really never was his legal Wife, I ſuppoſed he had no legal Title to her Money. Ay, ſays *Powell*, my Dear, pray what Fortune had you? She told him, above ten Thouſand Pounds, left to her by her Father. Ten Thouſand Pounds? ſays Captain *Powell*, that would make us rich as Emperors: I ſhould be very glad to ſnack it with him, if that was all: Why, *Biddy*, you never told me what a Fortune you was. I have had

had ſcarce Time to ſee you yet, ſays ſhe, and my Head is ſo full of other Things, that I never once thought of that. I am ſure, I wiſh it was well over with Mr. *Graham*, and then I ſhould be eaſy. Let thee and I, my Dear, ſays the Captain, go and tell him of it. Not for the World, ſays ſhe, I durſt as ſoon run my Hand into the Fire; but I wiſh you would write to him, ſay ſhe, my Dear, to me. I'll tell you what I have thought on, ſays I; and that is, to write to the Duke, ſtating the whole Affair, and get him to break it to Mr. *Graham*.

This Reſolution being taken, I ſent his Grace a long Letter the ſame Night, deſiring him to make himſelf Maſter of its Contents, before he applied to Mr. *Graham*; and begged his Anſwer with all Speed; and, in eight Days after, we had it. So ſoon as the Servant brought in the Letter, and I had declared it was from my Father, Mrs. *Powell* ſtarted up, and begged to retire; for ſhe had rather to be informed of its Contents from me, by Word of Mouth, ſhe ſaid, than to hear it read. So, ſhe being gone, I peruſed it to myſelf, and it containing nothing but what the Captain might ſee, I gave it him, by which Time Mrs. *Powell* came in again. I ſaw there was an incloſed Letter directed to Mrs. *Powell*; but that I would not open till her Return. Well, ſays ſhe, what

News?

News? All is very well, ſays I. What? Says ſhe, it may be he thinks he has had me long enough already, and is glad of an Opportunity to be rid of me; then ſeeming to be in a great Paſſion at her own Conjectures, ſhe fell a crying. I am ſure, ſays ſhe, I have not made him ſo bad a Wife, ſince I have lived with him. Come, come, ſays the Captain, why do'ſt cry, *Biddy?* The Gentleman ſeems a good Sort of a Man, and ſpeaks what is very handſome of you. I ſhewed Mrs. *Powell* the incloſed Letter, telling her, it was directed to her; but, ſhe ſaying it was Mr. *Graham*'s Hand, and that ſhe could not bear to read it, deſired me. It's Contents were.

MADAM,

'THERE being but few Comforts in 'this World without their Allay, I muſt 'not hope to be exempt from the Fate of other 'Men. His Grace the Duke informs me, that 'Mr. *Powell*, your firſt Huſband, is ſtill alive, and 'now with you at *London:* I wiſh him all that 'Happineſs which I had hoped for in you; 'but as I have been (though unknown to both 'of us) but an Intruder upon his Property ſo 'long, I hope he will pleaſe to accept the For-'tune I received with you, your Company 'having amply compenſated all my Expences

'on

'on your Account. I would ſay, I am ſorry for 'the Loſs of you, could I do it, without an im-'plied Injury to him, for whom, I am ſatisfied, 'you bear a juſt Eſteem'.

I am,

Your very humble Servant,

J^s. GRAHAM.

P. S. I do aſſure you, no one will be more glad to be ſerviceable to you, and ſee you both, than myſelf.

Upon hearing this Letter, Mrs. *Powell* was ready to burſt, in concealing her Paſſion; which the Captain perceiving: Give it Vent, give it Vent, my Dear, ſays he; don't imagine I ſhall be uneaſy, at any Expreſſions of your paſt Regard for Mr. *Graham*, who, by his Writing, has ſhewn himſelf a Man worthy to be beloved. Could you be deprived of ſo much Merit as he poſſeſſes, without a Tear, after an Indulgence to you for ſo many Years, you would be unworthy both of him and myſelf. Your Regard for him muſt wear off by Degrees; we are not Maſters enough of our own Faculties, to change Sides at Pleaſure. It would

would be ſufficient for me, that after ſo long Abſence, I barely gained the Preference; but I am ſatisfied, that I already have it in a great Degree; then don't think your Love to me can be demonſtrated, by a Diſregard for ſuch other Objects, as in a ſubordinate Degree may demand your Reſpect.

I told them, I believed two Men and a Lady could not be picked out in all *England*, who, on ſo critical an Occaſion, would have acted with ſuch an unbiaſſed Judgment as they ſeemed to do: I ſaid they ſhould ſtay with me till my Return, and then we would make a joint Viſit to Mr. *Graham*, which they were both pleaſed with the Thoughts of.

A little after this comes Captain *Farquharſon*, who told me, that, at my Command, he had enquired after a Commiſſion, and very luckily had met with a Lieutenant, whoſe Regiment was going to *Portmahon*, to relieve another there; and that he very much wanted to part with his Commiſſion, and would therefore diſpoſe of it very cheap: I demanding what he aſked for it; he ſaid, three Hundred Pounds. I bad him go and ſecure it, and I would pay the Money: He did ſo, and was received upon the Eſtaliſhment; and, at his Departure, giving him a Hundred Guineas in his Pocket, I bad him remember me, and for ever to bear in Mind as a Maxim, that

a

a Penny honeſtly gotten, as the Reward of Virtue or Induſtry, would be more ſerviceable, and remain by him longer, than Millions in a Way of Violence, Debauchery and Oppreſſion. He humbly thanked me, aſſuring me that he ſhould never forget that he owed both his Body and Soul to me, and ſo we parted.

When my Daughter had laid-in, and was up again, we returned to my Father's, preſenting him with a lovely Great-Grandſon, which he proved extreamly fond of; but in the Room of a very facetious, and innocently pleaſant Gentleman, as he was when we left him, he was, under old *Hawley*'s Tuition, become almoſt the Reverſe; ſaying very little, and taking leſs Notice of all that paſſed; and, in about two Years afterwards, he died, leaving me a penny Rent out of his Eſtate of clear ten Thouſand Pounds a Year. He gave the reſt between my Children, with the Reverſion of my Part to *Harry*; and divided all his ready Money, except ten Thouſand Pounds to my *Guardia* who is ſtill living, about five Thouſand Pounds to his Servants, and poor Neighbours, and an Hundred Thouſand Pounds to his Great-Grand-Child, amongſt myſelf, my Son and Daughter.

But I muſt go back to our Return from *London*, and mention our viſit to Mr. *Graham*. At our firſt Entrance, he begged Leave of Mr. *Powell*,

Powell, to ſalute his Lady, which he readily granted, and *Powell* returned him many Thanks, for the Civilities ſhewed to his Spouſe during his Abſence. Sir, ſays Mr. *Graham*, the Lady's Merit would claim Regard from every one; and as ſhe was to all appearance a Widow, and for ſeveral Years had been ſo, you can't I hope take it amiſs in me, for addreſſing her; very far from it Sir, ſays the Captain, and had it not been by the meereſt Providence in the World, I ſhould ſtill have imagined her dead, as ſhe did me; and myſelf might have taken another Wife very innocently, though not on ſo good Grounds, as ſhe did a Huſband; for the very Time and Occaſion of my Death was aſcertained to her.

Sir, ſays Mr. *Graham*, your Lady's Fortune is all in the public Funds, which, with the Intereſt, ſhall be transferred to you; Mr. *Powell* objecting to the Intereſt, would by no Means have that returned; Sir, ſays Mr. *Graham*, it ſhall never be ſaid, that your Lady's Society was not worth her Board; ſo pray mention it no more.

After this, Captain *Powell* purchaſed an Eſtate near me, and his Wife inſiſting he ſhould no more venture the Seas, he turned Country Gentleman and Farmer, and they lived very happily, having one Child afterwards.

My

My Family hath encreaſed very faſt, from both Branches, inſomuch that I have now, in my fifty-ſixth Year, Seventeen Grand Children, ſome of whom I hope will bury me, by the Remains of my dear Father. Few Perſons I believe have paſſed a Life of greater Diverſity than myſelf, which gave me the Thought of penning it down, for the Entertainment of my Grand Children, when I ſhall be no more.

FINIS.